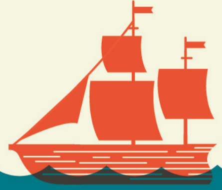


The CORPORATION That CHANGED THE WORLD

2nd Edition

HOW THE EAST INDIA COMPANY SHAPED THE MODERN MULTINATIONAL

Nick Robins

The Corporation That Changed the World

THE CORPORATION THAT CHANGED THE WORLD

How the East India Company Shaped the Modern Multinational

Second Edition

Nick Robins

PlutoPress
www.plutobooks.com

First published 2012 by Pluto Press
345 Archway Road, London N6 5AA

www.plutobooks.com

Distributed in the United States of America exclusively by
Palgrave Macmillan, a division of St. Martin's Press LLC,
175 Fifth Avenue, New York, NY 10010

Copyright © Nick Robins 2012

The right of Nick Robins to be identified as the author of this work has been
asserted by him in accordance with the Copyright, Designs and Patents Act 1988.

British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data
A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

ISBN 978 0 7453 3196 6 Hardback
ISBN 978 0 7453 3195 9 Paperback
ISBN 978 1 8496 4691 8 PDF eBook
ISBN 978 1 8496 4693 2 Kindle eBook
ISBN 978 1 8496 4692 5 EPUB eBook

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data applied for

This book is printed on paper suitable for recycling and made from fully managed
and sustained forest sources. Logging, pulping and manufacturing processes are
expected to conform to the environmental standards of the country of origin.

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Designed and produced for Pluto Press by Chase Publishing Services Ltd
Typeset from disk by Stanford DTP Services, Northampton, England
Simultaneously printed digitally by CPI Antony Rowe, Chippenham, UK and
Edwards Bros in the United States of America

For our parents and our children

Contents

List of Tables, Figures, Maps and Illustrations	viii
Acknowledgements	ix
Introduction	xi
Chronology	xvi
1 The Hidden Wound	1
2 This Imperious Company	19
3 Out of the Shadows	41
4 The Bengal Revolution	61
5 The Great East Indian Crash	84
6 Regulating the Company	102
7 Justice Will be Done	122
8 The Toxic Exchange	145
9 A Skulking Power	171
10 Unfinished Business	199
Epilogue	217
Notes	227
Select Bibliography	245
Index	251

List of Tables, Figures, Maps and Illustrations

TABLES

1.1 The changing share of world GDP 1600–1870 7
2.1 Corporate governance compared 28
2.2 The four sources of corporate behavior 34
3.1 Dutch and English East India Company exports from Asia 1688–1780 58
8.1 Opium exports from India to China 1800–1900, in chests 157
8.2 Flows of Silver into and out of China 1761–1833 159

FIGURES

2.1 The Company's share price 1693–1874 31
5.1 The Company's share price 1757–1784 91

MAPS

1 The Company's world xix
2 India in the late 1760s 65
3 The Company's London 220

ILLUSTRATIONS

1.1 Spiridione Roma, *The East Offering Her Riches to Britannia*, 1778 2
2.1 William Daniell, *East India Docks*, 1808 20
7.1 Thomas Rowlandson, *Billy Lackbeard and Charley Blackbeard playing at Football*, 1784 135
9.1 Unknown, *East India House*, constructed 1796–1799 178
9.2 *Punch*, *Execution of 'John Company'*, 1857 197
E.1 Statue of Robert Clive, London 218

Acknowledgements

This book started with a walk, and I'd like to express my appreciation to all those who came all or part of the way with me. None of this would have happened without my wife, Ritu, who was not just the inspiration for the book, but its sustainer – providing the patience and encouragement that brought the journey to an end.

Jane Trowell of Platform in London co-hosted the initial East India Company walks, which have been such great sources of ideas and insights into the corporation's London presence. I've also been inspired by Muhammad Ahmedullah's work at the Brick Lane Circle and his tireless efforts to explore the Company's contemporary relevance. Satish Kumar first published my initial thoughts on the Company in the pages of *Resurgence* magazine, and Mari Thekaekara then suggested that it should be turned into a book. David Castle and the team at Pluto Press have been consistently supportive from beginning to end. As for the book itself, I am indebted to the Al-Furqan Islamic Heritage Foundation based at Eagle House in Wimbledon for allowing me to use its library during the summers of 2004 and 2005 to write the first edition. I wish to thank Huw Bowen for graciously allowing me to read the pre-publication proofs of his work, *The Business of Empire*, and Jack Greene for allowing me to quote from his *Arenas of Asiatic Plunder*.

Many others read have helped in a multitude of different ways, notably Belliappa, Jem Bendell, Anu Bhasin, Sushil Chaudhury, Kate Crowe, Andrea Cunningham, Rajat Datta, Sister Christine Frost, Ram Gidoomal, Caspar Henderson, Jude Holland, Hameeda Hossain, Leslie Katz, Peter Kinder, James Marriott, Malcolm McIntosh, Derek Morris, Prasannan Parthasarathi, Steven Pincus, Munro Price, John Robins, Richard Sandbrook, Rajiv Sinha, John Sabapathy, Andrew Simms, Jonathon Sinclair-Wilson, David Somerset, Sara Wajid, Halina Ward, Georgie Wemyss and Jon Wilson.

For me, this book is an attempt to grapple with the shared past of Britain and Asia, confronting the Company's legacy so that future interactions can be based on principles of justice. This book is therefore dedicated to our parents and to our children: Elizabeth and John, Pushpa and Sushil, and Oliver, Joshua and Meera.

The author and publisher would like to thank the following individuals and institutions for their kind permission to use their images in this book: Illustration 1.1: the British Library; Illustration 2.1: Museum of London; Illustration 9.1: Punch Ltd; Illustration E.1: Andrew Simms. The maps were drawn by The Argument by Design. The Agha Shahid Ali verse on page 81 is reproduced by permission of Wesleyan University Press.

The John Masefield verse on page 85 is reproduced by permission of The Society of Authors as the literary representative of the Estate of John Masefield.

Wimbledon
January 2012

Introduction

The year 2000 was the 400th anniversary of the founding of the English East India Company. It was also the year that I came to work in the City of London, where the Company had been headquartered throughout its 275-year existence. Then and now, the City forms one of the major hubs of international finance. As the new millennium opened, market euphoria was still in the air, though with hindsight the crazed dot.com bubble had already peaked on the last day of 1999. I was entering the world of socially responsible investment as this speculative surge started to implode, revealing malpractice on a scale not seen since 1929. Once started, the slide in share values kept going for three full years until prices had halved. Momentarily, there were signs of humility on the trading floors. Across the world, inquiries got under way to discover if it was just a few 'bad apples' at Enron, Worldcom and Tyco who were to blame, or whether the entire 'barrel' of corporate capitalism was at fault. A decade on, and a far-deeper and still unresolved crisis wracks the world's financial markets, one that goes to the heart of the current model of globalization, exposing businesses that are 'too big to fail' and challenging the unequal gains of corporate executives.

What are often seen as entirely novel problems are, in fact, enduring facets of global economic history, a history that the English East India Company did so much to shape. No stranger to stock market bubbles, eye-watering corruption and government bail-outs, the Company actually outstripped the excesses of the contemporary corporation by conquering nations and ruling over millions with its private army. Yet – until recently – this pivotal role was absent from the public memory of post-imperial Britain. I discovered this perplexing gap when I first decided to visit the site of the Company's headquarters, East India House, more than a decade ago. The building was located in the heart of the Square Mile, near Exchange Alley where jobbers had first gathered in the coffee houses to swap rumour and trade the Company's shares. From Bank, I headed east, and when I reached the corner of Leadenhall and Lime Street, where East India House had stood for over two hundred years, there was nothing – no sign, no plaque, nothing to mark the fact that this was the location where the world's most powerful corporation had

once been based. In a country that is so drenched in the culture of heritage, this absence puzzled me: why had this historic Company been so completely erased from the face of London?

This book is an attempt to answer this question and, more importantly, to re-examine the meaning of the Company's legacy for the global economy of the twenty-first century. As I delved deeper into this corporation from the Age of Enlightenment, it became clear that this was not just a thing of the past, a simple commercial story of merchants bringing spices, textiles and tea from Asia to consumers in Europe. Rather it was a tale of institutional innovation and global transformation. The Company pioneered the shareholder model of corporate ownership and built the foundations for modern business administration. With a single-minded pursuit of personal and corporate gain, the Company and its executives eventually achieved market dominance in Asia, ruling over large swathes of India for a profit. But the Company also shocked its age with the scale of its executive malpractice, stock market excess and human oppression, which stimulated increasing levels of state intervention in part to remedy its failings, in the process extending Britain's empire. For me, the parallels with today's corporate leviathans soon became overpowering, with the Company outstripping Enron for corruption and Wal-Mart for market power, and pre-empting by more than 200 years the government bail-outs of banks such as Lloyds and the Royal Bank of Scotland.

As I pursued this enquiry, a powerful tension emerged, however. Unlike Britain, in India, the Company's legacy has always been close to the surface. The Company that 'came to trade and stayed to rule' remains a central part of the country's national identity, informing popular responses to the resurgent role of foreign corporations in liberalized India. Whether it is mining companies venturing into tribal areas or multinational retailers seeking a slice of India's booming market, the East India Company is still deployed as a universal motif to inspire caution. And as India rises to global economic prominence, a new assertiveness is being added to this storyline, symbolized by the relaunch of the East India Company in 2010, this time by an Indian entrepreneur, an act which for some marks the end of the freedom struggle. In China, where the Company's imprint was left not by armed conquest but by a flood of smuggled narcotics, it also plays a central role in the narrative of liberation. Indeed, the Company opened China's 'century of national humiliation' with its unrelenting export of Indian-grown opium, a contraband trade which when stopped by the Chinese authorities

sparked two wars that prised open the Qing Empire's markets for British free trade. The Company's rise and fall is therefore a global story that links the peoples of three river valleys – the Thames, the Ganges and the Pearl – and defines an imperial past as well as the corporate present.

There are countless histories of the East India Company, yet none address its social record as a corporation. This is a gap that this book seeks to fill, examining the four fundamental forces that defined its impacts on society – its financing model, its use of technology, its size and scale and its regulation at home and abroad. The book tries to recover a sense of the ferocious struggles over corporate accountability that the Company generated in the eighteenth century. Importantly, this is not an exercise in applying twenty-first-century values to an earlier age. Those who lived with the Company saw the corporation as a fundamentally problematic institution. Leading lights of its own times examined its practices and found them wanting. Adam Smith, Edmund Burke and Karl Marx were all united in their critique of this domineering, overbearing corporation, but for quite different reasons. For Smith, the corporation was one of the great enemies of the open market, 'a nuisance in every respect'.[1] Burke's concern was that it posed a revolutionary threat to the established order in both Britain and India. It also exhibited ethical failings of a structural nature. 'Every rupee of profit made by an Englishman', Burke told Parliament, 'is lost forever to India.'[2] And for Marx, writing 70 years later as the Company was on its last legs, it was the standard-bearer of Britain's 'moneyocracy', a more terrible creation than 'any of the divine monsters startling us in the Temple of Salsette' near Mumbai.[3] Yet, what makes the Company's story so inspirational is the way that its bid for unbounded economic power was repeatedly met by individuals such as these struggling to make it accountable. As a result, the Company provides timeless lessons on how (and how not) to confront corporate excess through reform, protest, litigation, regulation, and, ultimately, through corporate redesign.

To recover a sense of the Company's physical presence, I decided to take the investigation out of academia and encounter the Company's heartlands in Britain, India and China. By revisiting its headquarters and its warehouses, its mansions and its docks, I hoped to gain a much fuller understanding of the Company's character. The book has a narrative structure, but moves between past and present. To aid the reader, a chronology of milestones in the Company history is provided on page xvi. The first chapter then delves deeper into

its contested legacy, and explores the very different ways it is remembered in Europe and Asia. This is followed in Chapter 2 by an analysis of the Company's metabolism, examining its systems of governance and finance, as well as the inherent tensions that led to its downfall. Its initial trajectory as a seventeenth-century 'spice trader' is laid out in Chapter 3, along with the catastrophic consequences of its first bid for market supremacy in the 1690s. Eventually, the Company managed to engineer the takeover of Bengal in the middle of the eighteenth century: the causes and consequences of this momentous event are discussed in Chapter 4.

But like so many corporations in the twentieth and twenty-first centuries, the East India Company over-reached itself. Chapter 5 describes how incompetence and negligence combined to produce a stock market crash and one of India's worst famines. Many in Britain feared that the Company would use its new-found wealth to end England's hard-won liberties. Chapter 6 reviews Adam Smith's ferocious critique of the corporation and places it in the context of the wider movement of public protest, parliamentary activism and outright rebellion that sought to end the Company's abuses in the 1770s. Yet, justice was still not done, and Chapter 7 examines how Edmund Burke tried to place responsibility at the heart of the Company's charter. But the imperatives of empire and not ethics won the day. Its commercial swansong would come further East in China, where opium was identified as the one commodity that could dispense with the mounting exports of silver bullion to pay for Britain's growing thirst for tea. Chapter 8 delves into multiple roles the Company played to promote this illegal and lucrative trade. Yet by the time the second opium war was over, the Company itself was no more. Chapter 9 traces the road to the great rebellion against Company rule in 1857, showing how it progressively shed its commercial functions and became the profit-making agent of the British Crown in India, all the while paying dividends to its shareholders. 1857 signalled the end of the Company's anachronistic position in India, placing it in a twilight zone before it was finally wound up in 1874.

The enduring lessons of the Company's history for the management of the corporation are then laid out in Chapter 10, looking at the measures that could combine private benefit with public good. The book then closes by suggesting how a more honest encounter with the Company's legacy can be achieved.

A peculiar amnesia continues to hang over the role that corporations such as the East India Company have had in the

creation of the modern world. My hope is that this book will go some way to revealing how much just one company shaped the global past, and how we can use this knowledge to make today's corporate sector more fully accountable in the present.

A NOTE ON THE TEXT

As the spelling of Indian place names has changed over time, the wording used in the past is generally preferred in historical contexts (thus Calcutta), and current spelling applied for references to the present (thus Kolkata).

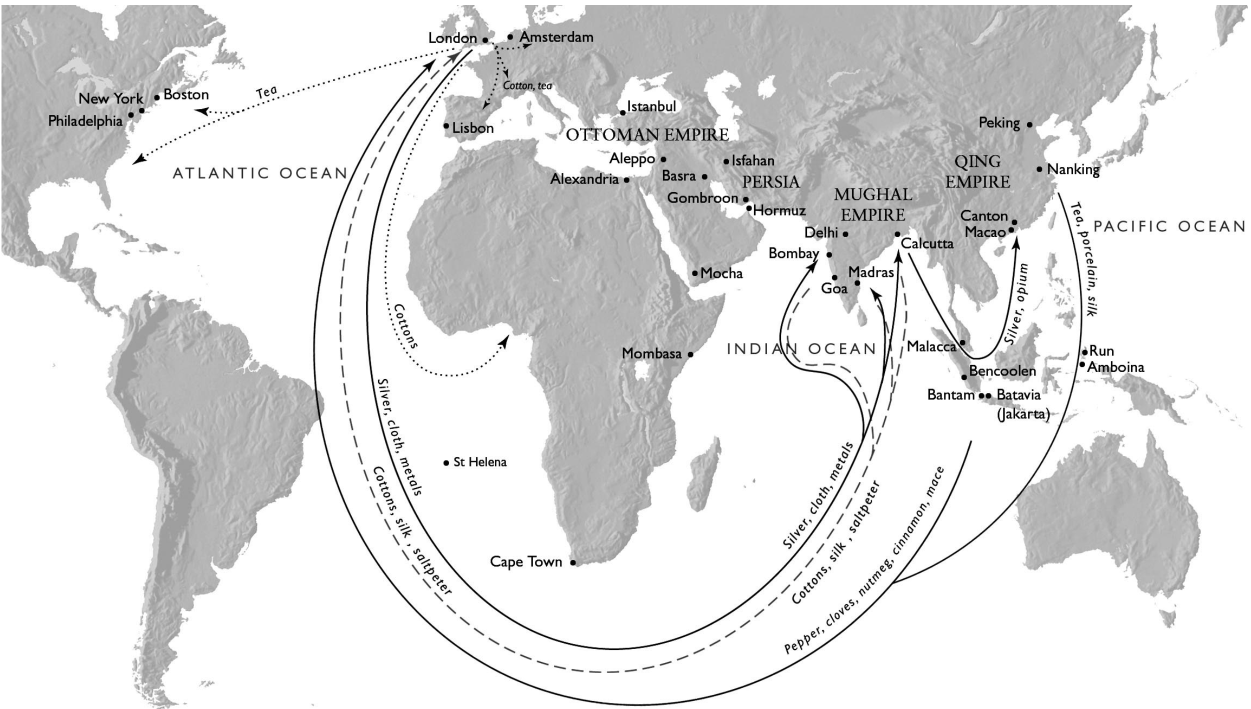
To give the Company's affairs greater immediacy, I have also converted some of the key financial statistics into current values. For this, I have used the online service provided by Economic History Resources, <www.eh.net>.

Chronology

1498	Portuguese fleet led by Vasco da Gama arrives off the Malabar coast
1595	Dutch Compagnie Van Verre established to take the ocean route to the East
1600	31 December: English East India Company (EIC) established
1602	Formation of the Dutch Verenigde Oostindische Compagnie (VOC)
1618	English Company negotiates first trade agreement with the Mughal Empire
1623	EIC merchants executed at Amboina (Indonesia) by VOC forces
1639	Fort St George at Madras established by the English Company
1648	The EIC moves headquarters to East India House at Leadenhall Street
1657	The EIC becomes a permanent joint stock corporation
1668	Bombay transferred to the EIC by King Charles II
1681	Josiah Child first elected as EIC governor (chairman)
1686–89	Child launches war with Mughal Empire
1690	Company establishes new base in Bengal at Calcutta
1695	First parliamentary investigation into Company corruption
1698	Parliament awards monopoly of Asia trade to the New Company
1709	Merger of New and Old Companies finalised
1717	Company receives comprehensive trade privileges (*firman*) in Mughal India
1721	Bubble in South Sea Company shareprices implodes
1729	Qing Empire bans import of opium except for medicinal purposes
1751–52	Robert Clive wins siege of Arcot
1756	Calcutta captured by Nawab of Bengal and 'black hole' incident
1757	February: Recapture of Calcutta by EIC 23 June: EIC troops under Clive defeat the Nawab at Plassey

1764	EIC defeats an alliance of Mughals, Bengal and Awadh at Buxar
1765	Clive acquires the management of the Bengal treasury (*diwani*) for the EIC
1769	Peak of 'Bengal Bubble' in the Company's shares
1770	Bengal Famine: between 1 and 10 million die of starvation
1772	Company appeals to government for financial assistance
1773	Regulating Act passed to reform EIC governance, and Warren Hastings becomes first Governor-General of India. Tea Act passed to encourage sale of EIC tea in the Americas; in December, American patriots dump EIC tea in Boston harbour
1776	Publication of Adam Smith's *Wealth of Nations*
1778	Spiridione Roma's *Offering* installed at East India House
1780	Duel between Philip Francis and Warren Hastings in Calcutta
1781	Hastings sends shipments of opium to China
1783	Failure of Charles James Fox and Edmund Burke's East India Bill
1784	William Pitt's India Act passed, increasing state powers over the EIC
1788	Start of impeachment trial of Warren Hastings in the House of Lords
1793	'Permanent Settlement' of Bengal's finances and new Charter Act, breaching Company trade monopoly for first time
1795	Warren Hastings acquitted at impeachment trial
1799	Dissolution of Dutch VOC, and conquest of Mysore by EIC
1806	Opening of new East India Dock
1813	Company loses monopoly of trade with India
1833	Parliament ends the Company's commercial operations; remains as territorial administrator in India
1839–42	First Opium War between Britain and China
1856–60	Second Opium War, resulting in legalisation of opium in China
1857	Outbreak of Indian Mutiny or First War of Independence in northern India

1858	Parliament replaces Company with direct British rule in India
1861	East India House demolished
1874	1 June: Dissolution of the East India Company



Map 1 The Company's world

1
The Hidden Wound

THE OFFERING

In 1778, the directors of the Honourable East India Company installed an extravagant new painting in their London headquarters, East India House. Like much corporate art before and since, the quality of the painting was generally regarded as poor, with one commentator describing it as ‘a work too feeble to confer any credit either on the artist or his employers’.[1] But the directors were not seeking applause for the artistic merit of their commission. Ten feet across and over eight feet high, Spiridione Roma’s giant allegory of *The East Offering Her Riches to Britannia* was designed to impress (see Illustration 1.1). Fixed to the ceiling of the Company’s revenue committee room, where the directors monitored the flow of profit and loss, the purpose of *The Offering* was simple: to convey the commercial domination that the Company had now achieved in Asia.

At the heart of the painting is the relationship of three women, each representing their country. The scene is an Asian shoreline. Sitting high on a rock to the left, a fair Britannia looks down on a kneeling India who offers her crown surrounded by rubies and pearls. Beside her, China presents her own tribute of porcelain and tea. From a grove of palm trees to the right comes a convoy of labourers carrying bales of cloth, along with an elephant and a camel, all directed westward by a stern Mercury, the classical god of commerce. The British lion sits at Britannia’s feet, as does Old Father Thames, a sign that it was to London that much of this wealth would flow.[2] Far off, beyond the figures, one of the Company’s famous merchant ships sails into the distance, laden with the treasure of the East, its striped ensign fluttering in the wind.

For *The Offering*, Spiridione drew on a long line of similar depictions of European trading supremacy. The early success of the Honourable Company’s main rival, the Dutch United East India Company (Verenigde Oostindische Compagnie – VOC), had provided Pieter Isaacsz with the inspiration he needed for his 1606 painting symbolising Amsterdam as the centre of world trade.[3]

Illustration 1.1 Spiridione Roma, *The East Offering Her Riches to Britannia*, 1778

In Isaacsz's allegory, Amsterdam holds a horn of plenty in her right hand, and with her left controls the globe. Servants offer her pearls, while three VOC ships command the centre of the painting. A century later, in 1729, the English Company had enlisted the fashionable Dutch sculptor Michael Rysbrack to create a grand marble chimney piece for its new headquarters. On the left of the carving sits Britannia, receiving a treasure chest from a woman representing Asia, escorted by two other women, one leading a camel, the other a lion; two Company ships frame the piece on the right. Importantly, Britannia and Asia look each other in the eye, as if to symbolise that this was still an age when the Company based its wealth on exchange. The English Company had certainly gained ground, but still lagged its Dutch rival, and was also starting to face tough competition from new French Compagnie des Indes.

By 1778, however, there was little doubt that 'John Company', as it has become known, had replaced 'Jan Compagnie' as master of Europe's trade with Asia. Years of argument over trading rights with local rulers in India had culminated two decades earlier in the takeover of Bengal in 1757. Combining economic muscle with its small but effective private army, the Company's forces under Robert

Clive had defeated the Nawab of Bengal at Plassey (Palashi), 90 miles north of its trading base of Calcutta (Kolkata). The Company quickly installed Mir Jafar – a general who had betrayed the defeated Nawab – as the first of a series of puppet rulers of Bengal. More of a commercial transaction than a real battle, Plassey was followed by the systematic looting of Bengal's treasury. In a powerful symbol of the transfer of wealth that had begun, the Company loaded the treasury's gold and silver onto a fleet of over a hundred boats and sent them downriver to Calcutta. In one stroke, Clive had netted £2.5 million for the Company and £234,000 for himself.[4] Today this would be equivalent to a £262 million corporate windfall and a cool £24.5 million success fee for Clive. Historical convention views Plassey as the first step in the creation of the British Empire in India. It is perhaps better understood as the East India Company's most successful business deal.

In the decade that followed, the Company used its dominant position to monopolise the foreign and internal trade of Bengal, driving out Asian, Dutch and French merchants in the process. In August 1765, the Company's supremacy was formally recognised by the impoverished Mughal Emperor Shah Alam II with the grant of Bengal's *diwani*. This office of state gave the Company control over tax collection for more than 10 million people. For a stock market-listed company with profit as its primary motive, this acquisition of a country's public finances was truly revolutionary. Not surprisingly, the Company's share price boomed when news of the acquisition reached London's financial markets in April 1766.

Just as Spiridione portrayed, the wealth of the East began to pour into England. This represented an extraordinary turnaround. Before Plassey, the 'balance of trade was against all nations in favour of Bengal', wrote Alexander Dow in his 1773 *History of Hindostan*.[5] Bengal had been 'the sink where gold and silver disappeared without the least prospect of return'. Now that flow was reversed. Monopoly power and windfall revenues combined to create unrivalled purchasing power that bought ever-increasing quantities of Eastern goods to European markets. In spite of tough trade barriers against cheap Indian calicoes, Bengal's textiles, notably the soft Dhaka muslins, were still an essential fashion item for Britain's female elite. Indeed, Spiridione's Britannia seems swathed in muslin. But tea was now the Company's prize commodity, and the riches of Bengal helped to boost shipments from the Company's Chinese subsidiary in Canton (Guangzhou) three-fold in the five years following 1768. The annual consumption of tea rose to some one

pound for each man, woman and child in England. On the streets of London, the Company also made its presence felt, not least at its imposing headquarters on Leadenhall Street, the huge dock complex in Blackwall and the fine merchant houses around Stepney Green. For a Parliamentary Select Committee investigating the Company's affairs five years later, 1778 – the year of Spiridione's triumphal portrayal of commercial success – would be seen as 'the high flood tide' of its exports from Asia.[6]

MISSING ELEMENTS

The East Offering Her Riches to Britannia provides us with a fascinating window onto the ways in which the Company wished to see itself – and be seen – at the peak of its commercial powers. Its mix of classical imagery and oriental exoticism – Mercury in a palm grove – captures well the sense of unlimited opulence that the Company's success in the East had made possible.

Yet much is missing from this vast tableau. Like so many high-profile corporate ventures since, the takeover of Bengal proved to be an acquisition too far for the East India Company. Initial stock market euphoria quickly gave way to excess, mismanagement and collapse. As the Company transformed itself from a modest trading venture into a powerful corporate machine, its systems of governance completely failed to cope with the new responsibilities it faced. Oppression of local weavers and peasants became the norm. Military spending spiralled out of control as adventurers took over from traders. Corruption assumed epidemic proportions and speculation overtook its shares, stoked up by Clive and others. Then, in 1769, conflict in south India rattled nervy investors, sending its share price into free fall. Financial crisis stalked Europe and the Company faced bankruptcy. Across the world in Bengal, drought turned to famine as Company executives profiteered from rising grain prices. Plays, pamphlets and poems poured from the presses back in Britain to pillory the Company and its executives. Company executives became caricatured as grasping Nabobs (or Nobs), the Yuppies of Georgian England. Like many of his contemporaries, the Glasgow Professor of Moral Philosophy, Adam Smith, was horrified at the way that the Company 'oppresses and domineers' in the East Indies.[7] Parliament was forced to intervene, while over the Atlantic in Britain's American colonies, patriots focused on the Company's tea as a symbol of oppression. For one 'Mechanic' appealing to the tradesmen of Pennsylvania, America was faced with

'the most powerful Trading Company in the Universe', an institution 'well-versed in tyranny, plunder, oppression and bloodshed'.[8] On the night of 16 December 1773, patriots dressed as 'Indians' dumped East India Company tea into Boston harbour, the symbolic start to the American War of Independence.

War still raged in the Americas when *The Offering* was first unveiled in the Company's headquarters. In London, the Company's share price continued to languish at half the level it had reached during the 1760s. To the east in India, the Company's most senior executive, Governor-General Warren Hastings, had taken a succession of desperate measures to restore the Company's financial health. Looking back on this era as Parliament once more sought to bring the Company to account in the early 1780s, the philosopher/politician Edmund Burke was savage in his criticism. For him, India had been 'radically and irretrievably ruined' through the Company's 'continual Drain' of wealth – a phrase that would haunt the next 150 years of British presence in India.[9]

Yet, none of this – the speculation, wars and corruption – could be allowed to disturb the expression of supreme corporate confidence that the Company's 24 directors had commissioned Spiridione Roma to portray. Then, as now, some things are always hidden.

A STRANGE INVISIBILITY

Established on a cold New Year's Eve, 1600, England's East India Company is the mother of the modern corporation. In its more than two and a half centuries of existence, it bridged the mercantilist world of chartered monopolies and the industrial age of corporations accountable solely to shareholders. The Company's establishment by royal charter, its monopoly of all trade between Britain and Asia and its semi-sovereign privileges to rule territories and raise armies certainly mark it out as a corporate institution from another time. Yet in its financing, structures of governance and business dynamics, the Company was undeniably modern. It may have referred to its staff as servants rather than executives, and communicated by quill pen rather than email, but the key features of the shareholder-owned corporation are there for all to see.

Beyond its status as a corporate pioneer, the sheer size of its operations makes the Company historically significant on a global scale. At its height, the Company's empire of commerce stretched from Britain across the Atlantic and around the Cape to the Gulf and on to India. Trading posts were established at St Helena in

the mid-Atlantic, where Napoleon drank Company coffee in exile; 'factories' were also established at Basra and Gombroon (Bandar Abbas) in the Middle East. But it was in India that the Company's impacts were most profound. Some of the country's major cities grew on the back of the Company's trade, not least Bombay (Mumbai), Calcutta (Kolkata) and Madras (Chennai). Beyond these coastal ports, the Company established a huge land empire, first as an opportunistic quest for extra revenues and later as an end in itself, eventually ruling most of the subcontinent. Yet, the Company's footprint did not stop there, but stretched to South-East Asia and beyond to China and Japan. Penang and Singapore were both ports purchased by the Company in an age when territories could be bought and sold like commodities. And if India was the site of the Company's first commercial triumphs, it was in China that it made its second fortune. The Company's 'factory' at Canton was the funnel through which millions of pounds of Bohea, Congou, Souchon and Pekoe teas flowed west to Britain and beyond. In the other direction came first silver and later a flood of Patna opium, smuggled in chests proudly bearing the Company *chop* (or logo).

Throughout its existence the Company was in a state of almost constant metamorphosis. Its end would come following the uprising against Company rule in 1857–58, a contest generally known as the Indian Mutiny in Britain and the First War of Independence in India. By then, the Company had lost almost all connection with the band of merchants who set out in four tiny ships to break into the Indonesian pepper market at the beginning of the seventeenth century. It no longer traded, and it administered its conquests in India as a licensed agent on behalf of the British Crown. But one abiding link remained: its ultimate purpose as a profit-making agency, always with an eye to its shareholders and the annual dividend. Following the suppression of the great rebellion, there was a fierce public backlash against the Company's anachronistic status. In the India Act of 1858, the Company was effectively nationalised, with all its rights and responsibilities taken over by the British state; the British Raj had begun. Yet, the Company lingered on, 'a shadow of a shade', according to one observer. It may have lost its purpose, but its directors were insistent that its capital should be protected for the remaining years of its last charter. Eventually, time ran out, its shares were exchanged for government bonds, and on 1 June 1874, the Company ceased to exist.

Colonial rule was certainly the final outcome of the Company's adventurism in Asia. But it was the hunt for personal and corporate

profit that had drawn the Company inexorably on. The results of this enduring dynamic were world-shattering. By the time of its demise, the Company had changed the course of economic history, reversing the centuries' old flow of wealth from west to east. From Roman times, Europe had always been Asia's commercial supplicant, shipping out gold and silver in return for spices, textiles and other luxury goods. European traders were attracted to the East for its wealth and sophistication at a time when the western economy was a fraction the size of Asia's. And for its first 150 years, the Company had to repeat this practice, as there was almost nothing that England could export that the East wanted to buy. Then first in Bengal in the decades that followed Plassey, and then in China through the opium trade, the Company broke this longstanding pattern of trade and wealth. By the time of its demise, Europe's economy was double the size of those of China and India, a complete reversal of the situation in 1600 (see Table 1.1). There are many elements in this turnaround, but the East India Company was certainly one of the chief agents that engineered the great switch in global development that marked the birth of the modern age.

Table 1.1 The changing share of world GDP 1600–1870 (in million 1990 international $)

	1600	*% of total*	*1700*	*% of total*	*1870*	*% of total*
Britain	6,007	1.80	10,709	2.88	100,179	9.10
Western Europe	65,955	20.02	83,395	22.46	370,223	33.61
China	96,000	29.14	82,800	22.30	189,740	17.23
India	74,250	22.54	90,750	24.44	134,882	12.25
World	329,417		371,369		1,101,369	

Source: Angus Maddison, *The World Economy*, Paris: OECD, 2001, p. 261, Table B-18.

Yet, if you walk to the site of East India House as I did, you will see that nothing marks the tumultuous impact of this once mighty corporation. Today Richard Rogers's glass and steel Lloyds Building stands in its place. It was here that the Company's board of directors guided its global operations, and where its famous quarterly auctions were held. Sometimes lasting for days, such was the ferment generated by these auctions that the noise of 'howling and yelling' from the Sale Room could be heard through the thick stone walls on the street outside. Lawrence Norfolk's wonderful 1991 novel *Lemprière's Dictionary* captures some of these passions, with his tale of how a secret society manipulates the Company from

caverns deep beneath the streets of London. As the hero approaches East India House, he finds 'a stone hulk stretched down Leadenhall Street like a petrified carcass'.[10]

Leadenhall Street was not the Company's first headquarters. When it was newly established by Elizabeth I as 'The Governor and Company of Merchants of London Trading to the East Indies', its business was done at the City mansion of its first Governor (or Chairman), Sir Thomas Smythe. His house was situated on the narrow Philpot Lane, where an echo remains in the appropriately named 'Spice Trader' curry restaurant. The Company then shifted a few hundred yards to the north and occupied Crosby Hall. Long after the Company had moved on, this magnificent Jacobean structure remained in the financial heart of London. When property developers threatened it with demolition at the turn of the twentieth century, a public campaign paid for it to be dismantled and re-erected brick by brick on the riverfront at Chelsea. The hall remained in public use as a college until it was sold off by the Conservative Prime Minister, Margaret Thatcher, after her abolition of the Greater London Council in 1986. It was then purchased by a financier who had recently left the insurance giant, Lloyds – itself the site for the next phase of the Honourable Company's rise.

First occupied by the Company in 1648, East India House went through numerous incarnations during its 200-year life. In the 1690s it was known as 'the house belonging to the East India Company which are a corporation of men with long heads and deep purposes'.[11] By the early eighteenth century, it had become one of the landmarks of the City of London, and along with the South Sea Company and the Bank of England formed the corporate trinity of the age. Topped with a statue of a sailor and two dolphins, East India House had a distinctly maritime feel to it, and conveyed its importance to the passer-by in having both the royal and its own corporate crests emblazoned on its façade. With the collapse of the South Sea Company following its infamous bubble in 1721, the Company and its headquarters achieved a new ascendancy in Walpole's England. In his *Tour Through the Whole Island of Great Britain*, published in the 1720s, Daniel Defoe describes the first East India House as 'an old, but spacious building, very convenient, though not beautiful'.[12] Yet the size of the Company's operations meant that new warehouses and cellars were needed, and a purpose-built stone headquarters was opened in 1729. Plain on the outside, the new East India House conveyed its global reach within through a series of oil paintings depicting its key trading

posts from the Atlantic (St Helena) to Africa (Cape Town) to the west coast of India (Bombay and Tellicherry) and round to Madras and Calcutta. A new fireplace was also installed in the boardroom portraying Britannia exchanging gifts with the East.

After Plassey, these emblems of commercial prowess were joined by statues of the Company's military heroes, first Clive and then Stringer Lawrence. But as the Company's power grew, so the solid building of the 1720s no longer matched the grandeur of its global operations. James Noorthouck in his *New History of London*, published in 1773, observed that 'the appearance of the building is nowise suited to the opulence of the Company, whose servants exercise sovereign authority in the Indian territories'.[13] So, between 1796 and 1799, an immense 200-foot long classical building was constructed. Above the six-columned portico, the triangular tympanum displayed George III defending the commerce of the East, once again with three allegorical ladies: Britannia on a lion, Europe riding a horse and Asia following on a camel.

Behind this imposing edifice sat the Company's headquarters' staff of around 200 clerks in the early nineteenth century. The attractions of a steady income and a good pension attracted some whose memory lives on for their literary connections. Author of the *Essays of Elia* and friend of Romantic poets, Charles Lamb worked in the Company's accounts department from 1792. Samuel Taylor Coleridge dedicated his 1797 poem, 'This Lime Tree Bower', to 'my gentle-hearted Charles', 'who had "pined and hunger'd after Nature, many a year, in the great City pent!"'. For 33 years Lamb would alternately bless the steady income that his job provided and curse the boredom of office life. 'Confusion blast all mercantile transactions, all traffick, exchange of commodities, intercourse between nations...' he wrote to his friend William Wordsworth in 1815.[14] Wordsworth's own brother, John, would die in the wreck of the Company's ship, the *Earl of Abergavenny*, in February 1805. In 1819, Lamb was joined at East India House by the gothic novelist Thomas Love Peacock, who took up the position as one of three assistant examiners. Amused by Peacock's new job, Leigh Hunt wrote to the poet Percy Bysshe Shelley that 'we joke upon his oriental grandeur, his Brahminical learning and his inevitable tendencies to become one of the corrupt'.[15] The utilitarian activist James Mill entered the Company's service in the same year, and was joined in 1823 by his son, John Stuart, and in 1835 by another son, James Bentham (who took up a position in Bengal). After the father's death, George Grote Mill would follow in his footsteps,

becoming a clerk in 1844. One way or another, whether through direct employment, family connections or the consumption of its products, almost everyone in eighteenth- and nineteenth-century England was connected to the East India Company.

This third and final incarnation of East India House is now long gone, torn down in 1861, just three years after the Company's possessions had been absorbed into Queen Victoria's empire. Spiridione's allegory of Britannia was one of the many objects that made the short but symbolic journey across London from the commercial east to the political west. Many of the Company's artefacts now fill the Victoria and Albert Musuem, most memorably the clockwork tiger of Tipu Sahib, Sultan of Mysore. *The Offering*, however, was used to decorate first the India Office, and then its successor, the Foreign and Commonwealth Office in Whitehall, where it still stands above the Gurkha staircase. The Company's statues of Clive, Hastings and Cornwallis litter the building. Elsewhere in London, the rest of the Company's physical legacy is scant, but, this being Britain, there is a pub – the East India Arms on Fenchurch Street – a mere fragment of a huge warehouse complex that stretched towards Aldgate.

The City of London is full of monuments, but none record the existence of the East India Company. This absence is particularly strange given the fact that the Company was a London institution *par excellence*, its charter explicitly excluding merchants from other ports from trading with Asia. It is not as if London does not choose to remember some of its past. At the site of East India House, for example, a plaque commemorates the founding of the London Penny Post by William Dockwood in 1680. But there is nothing to mark the fact that the East India Company was headquartered here for more than two hundred years.[16] Many institutions have justifiably disappeared into the anonymity of history. But the erasure of the East India Company is highly suspicious.

Explaining this absence goes to the heart of the contested position that the Company holds in history. Outside the world's universities, its legacy is still a living part of collective memories across the world, a legacy that is constantly being evoked and re-evoked through publications, exhibitions and documentaries. The recall is uneven, however, with deeply clashing perspectives in Europe and Asia – none more so than in India, where the Company retains a powerful symbolic force in contemporary culture.

CONFRONTING THE SYNDROME

From the ruins of the Company's fort at the pepper port of Tellicherrry on the west coast to the grandeur of Chennai's Fort St George on the east, the Company's physical presence in India continues to impress. The mark is greatest in Kolkata, a 'company town' of immense proportions. Some of the British street-names have been changed, but the weight of the Company's imprint on the city is unmistakable. Recent excavations by the Archaeological Survey of India have shown that the area around what subsequently became Kolkata had been a thriving commercial centre centuries before Job Charnock claimed it for the Company in August 1690. Known throughout the East as a 'Paradise on Earth' for its wealth and prosperity, Bengal attracted waves of European merchants for the quality of its textiles. Portuguese traders were first to establish a presence in 1535, only to be replaced by the Dutch a century later. The English Company came relatively late to Bengal, but the new base at Calcutta grew quickly. The first battlements of what became Fort William were erected in 1696, and two years later, the Company acquired lordship (*zamindari*) rights over the three adjacent villages of Sutanuti, Govindpore and Kolikata. By the 1720s Bengal was contributing over half of the Company's entire imports from Asia, most of this coming via Calcutta. Many Indians were attracted by the prosperity the city offered, and by the middle of the eighteenth century, Calcutta had over 120,000 inhabitants, of which just 250 were Company officials.

Two hundred years on, Fort William still sits squat by the river Hugli, a mile south of the original site. The original Fort had been besieged and captured by the Bengali army in June 1756. Following the recapture of Calcutta and the victory at Plassey, Clive relocated it in a more strategic position. Its impregnable defensive walls have never been tested, and the Fort continues its military traditions as the base for Eastern Command of the Indian Army. Nearby, the white-marble Victoria Memorial displays a remarkably balanced exhibition on Calcutta's history and the Company's formative role in the city's rise. To the north, the Company-era Government House maintains a continuity of occupation as Raj Bhavan, the residence of the Governor of Bengal. Construction of this huge building began almost as soon as the fifth Governor-General of Bengal, Richard Wellesley, had arrived in India in 1798. Not to be outdone by the grandeur of the new East India House, which was nearing completion back in London, Wellesley modelled his future

residence on Kedleston Hall, a country mansion in Derbyshire. Eager to get even with his employers, whom he dismissively referred to as 'the cheesemongers of Leadenhall Street', Wellesley spared no expense in this monument to vainglory. Close by stands the Writer's Building named after the Company's clerks, who once filled this administrative hub; it still houses the civil servants of the West Bengal government.

These tangible representations of the deep entanglement between the Company and Calcutta are accentuated by questions of identity that generate conflict centuries on. Only recently, for example, local families successfully challenged the claim that Job Charnock was the official 'founder' of Calcutta, arguing that there were numerous Indian settlements in the area long before the Company arrived. Plassey also continues to evoke strong emotions among ordinary Bengalis. Mir Jafar, the general who sided with Clive in order to seize the throne, remains a popular symbol of betrayal. More broadly in India, the East India Company continues to be an icon of the potential dangers of foreign corporations. This perspective has deep roots in India's independence movement, which eventually expelled the British in 1947. In his *Economic History of India under British Rule* (1908), Romesh Chunder Dutt revived and redirected Burke's earlier critique of the East India Company so that it served his cause of root-and-branch reform. 'A change came over India under the rule of the East India Company', concluded Dutt, arguing that the Company simply 'considered India as a vast estate or plantation, the profits of which were to be withdrawn from India and deposited in Europe'.[17] Through Dutt's works, the 'drain' became a powerful symbol of the British exploitation of India, first by the Company and then by the Raj.

Forty years later, the Company's role in India's oppression was taken up by Jawaharlal Nehru as part of his campaign for full independence from Britain. In the summer of 1944, India's future prime minister was once again behind bars. Locked away in Ahmadnagar Fort, Nehru was serving his ninth – and final – term of imprisonment from the British authorities, this time following the Congress Party's 'Quit India' campaign of 1942. As in previous spells in gaol, Nehru turned his attention to writing in order to make sense of his predicament. In the space of just five months, he had filled a thousand pages, only stopping, he said, because he almost ran out of paper. The result was *The Discovery of India*, the final and perhaps most profound of his 'prison trilogy'. In it, Nehru presents his vision of how India's rich and complex past related to

its struggle for independence. For him, the writing of history was not a remote, academic exercise but intimately bound up with taking action to change the present.

Running through the book is Nehru's conviction that the two centuries of British rule had imposed a terrible burden on India that needed urgent removal. But it is when he describes the English East India Company and its plunder of Bengal following Clive's victory at Plassey that this cool voice of humanist reason boils over in anger. 'The corruption, venality, nepotism, violence and greed of money of these early generations of British rule in India', he thunders, 'is something which passes comprehension.' To underline his distaste at the Company's practices, he then adds, 'it is significant that one of the Hindustani words which has become part of the English language is "loot"'.[18]

Today, after a decade of economic liberalisation in India, this critical analysis of the Company's role in Indian history has come to the surface once more. For many Indians – particularly in Bengal – the Company's story has two profound morals: first that multinational companies want not just trade, but power; and second that division and betrayal among Indians enables foreign rule. 'Every child knows the perfidious story of how Bengal was lost at Plassey,' writes Gurcharan Das, adding, 'is it surprising that we are suspicious of merchants and foreign companies?'.[19] The human rights abuses and corruption associated with the Enron power project at Dabhol brought these fears to a head in the late 1990s. 'It's the second coming of the East India Company,' argued Justice Daud, a retired judge of the Mumbai High Court, who led a fact-finding team following a series of violent incidents at Dabhol in March 1997.[20] For many, what made Enron's practices at Dabhol so unacceptable was the way in which the company had flagrantly manipulated the permit process. The result was a contract with the Maharashtra State that is regarded as 'the most massive fraud in the country's history', according to Arundhati Roy.[21] Enron achieved this, she argues, by deploying a 'time-tested strategy' first used by the East India Company, of corrupting decision-making and dividing the community.[22] Again and again, 'the return of the East India Company' is used as a catch-phrase to describe the recent influx of multinationals into India, whether global mining corporations or business more generally.[23]

For some, this focus on the 'creeping acquisition of effective control and wealth' by foreign interests amounts to a full-blown 'East India Company Syndrome'.[24] In a wide-ranging review of the

lessons learned from economic reform, Arvind Virmani identifies a generational divide between those brought up before independence and those born afterwards. 'The most important cultural memory of the former was about being ruled by the British government for a century and (most galling) by the British East India Company for a century before that.' This translated into a fear of foreign capitalists and, in its most extreme form, this syndrome 'encompassed a lack of confidence in one's abilities relative to white foreigners'.[25] A reaction against this 'syndrome' is now in motion, with observers arguing that it is time for India to 'get over' the East India Company. A new sense of national assertiveness also informs real decisions about India's future economic path, whether the issue is tightening patent rules for pharmaceuticals or opening up the retail sector to foreign companies.[26]

AN OLD ROMANCE

If India can sometimes seem to be remembering the East India Company too much, then Britain can be easily accused of not remembering its lessons at all. The Company's physical disappearance from the streets of London has been matched until recently by a blank in the country's cultural memory. For most of the 60 years since Britain left India, John Company was regarded as something that could be consigned to the history books, its deeds to be squabbled over by competing academics. The onset of globalisation changed all this, prompting a resurgence of interest in the Company's contribution to earlier eras of world trade. Indeed, for an organisation that has been defunct for more than a century, 'John Company' is undergoing something of a comeback. In the first decade of the twenty-first century, exhibitions at the British Library, the Victoria and Albert Museum along with a string of popular histories, revived the Honourable Company's reputation. Its founders were hailed as swashbuckling adventurers crossing the globe in search of spices and its executives profiled as multicultural 'white mughals'.

In the business community, the attraction of the Company lies in its commercial success, a model for today's global economy. Standard Chartered Bank, for example, was one of the sponsors of the British Library's 2002 'Trading Places' exhibition on the East India Company. Its then chief executive drew clear conclusions from its history, arguing that the challenge is now to 'build on the courageous, creative and truly international legacy of the East India

Company'.[27] Rod Eddington, one-time chief executive of British Airways, took similar encouragement from the Company's record, seeing it as a case study in how corporations succeed 'by dint of hard work, shrewdness and charm'.[28] At the turn of the century, a dot-com entrepreneur briefly relaunched the East India Company as a web-based 'virtual factory' offering a range of branded products. According to the site, using the Company's name 'gives credibility to virtually any product or service', combining 'the great strengths of British brands – tradition, old-fashioned luxury, impeccable class – with the general appeal of exotic countries, seafaring, travel and adventure'.[29]

Others in Britain are drawn to the Company's cultural legacy, arguing that its encounter with India generated a fusion of lifestyles, with English merchants adopting local clothes, and some even embracing Hindu and Muslim religion. William Dalrymple in particular has praised what he sees as 'the vibrant multiculturalism of the East India Company'.[30] Through the tale of an eighteenth-century love affair between a Company official and a Hyderabadi noblewoman, Dalrymple's *White Mughals* projects a world where English traders not only fell for the women of India, but its culture as well. His message for the present day is that this demonstrates a 'clash of civilisations' is not inevitable, that 'East and West are not irreconcilable'.[31]

Both of these romantic interpretations – the entrepreneurial and the cultural – fail to confront the costs associated with the Company's business practices. Then, as now, trade can generate real wealth, but it can equally create misery and devastation. Yet these attitudes are deeply rooted in Britain's self-created myth of an empire organically created by traders rather than tyrants. A wonderful Victorian amateurism informs this view, encapsulated by John Seeley's conclusion in 1883 that 'nothing great that has ever been done by Englishmen was done so unintentionally, so accidentally as the conquest of India'.[32] In the depths of the Second World War, a patriotic series of illustrated books, *Britain in Pictures*, revived this version of history with a slim volume on the 'merchant adventurers' written by Maurice Collis, historian of the opium trade. 'Private enterprise, courage and audacity founded the British Empire', it declared, before going on to profile Clive as 'one of the best known of England's worthies' and praise Stamford Raffles' founding of Singapore.[33] In their rush to focus on the twin themes of celebrity and consumption in the Company's story, the imperial romantics portray a limited and rose-tinted picture of the Company.

In particular, by looking at the Company through the lens of culture, the underlying purpose of its presence in India is forgotten. Even the British Library appeared to fall in this trap when it hosted the 'Trading Places' exhibition in 2002. Bringing together a wealth of artefacts, the exhibition focused on the Company's role in the birth of the modern consumer society, exploring how Britain 'became a nation of tea drinkers' and how 'words like shampoo, rice and bungalow became part of the English language'. The exhibition acknowledged the seamier side of the Company's activities, stating that in the years after 1757 became 'notorious for the plunder of India as Company employees amassed personal wealth', describing this as the 'bleeding of Bengal'. These admissions were, however, largely buried among a glorification of the consumption patterns that the Company pioneered. The exhibition was certainly keen to draw out the contemporary resonance of commodities the Company traded. But it shied away from making equally powerful linkages between the issues of corporate power, fair trade and human rights that affected eighteenth-century merchants as much as twenty-first-century multinationals.

More serious still, the initial plans for the exhibition had failed to contain any mention of the Company's role in the opium trade until the Chinese community protested. A campaigning website, The Truth About Trading Places, was established to highlight the human suffering caused by the import into China of opium grown under first Company and later British imperial monopoly.[34] The campaign proved successful and an additional panel was added to the exhibition, stating that 'free trade in Asia came to mean the lucrative and immoral freedom to deliver cargoes of opium'. The Company may be long dead, but its battles live on.

RECKONING WITH JOHN COMPANY

The East India Company deserves to be looked at as it was – a profit-making company that generated great wealth, but one that also contributed to immense suffering. The Company's contemporaries from its early days as a spice trader through to its time as a licensed administrator of India were deeply conscious of this duality. People in both Britain and Asia were drawn by its unparalleled economic capacities – whether Indian weavers seeking steady employment or British entrepreneurs looking for a prosperous career in the East. Equally, however, its role and conduct were continually contested by merchants excluded from the Asia trade, by Indian rulers uneasy

about its ultimate intentions and by parliamentarians critical of its overseas conduct.

Often the same person would carry within them both admiring and hostile perceptions of the Company. The *Gentleman's Magazine*, one of the leading English journals of the eighteenth century, exemplifies the way the Company could stimulate both fear and admiration. In March 1767, a year after the news of the Company's capture of the *diwani* had reached London, the *Magazine* was proclaiming that 'the prodigious value of these new acquisitions may open to this nation such a mine of wealth as not only in a few years to pay off the national debt, to take off the land tax, and ease the poor of burdensome taxes; but to add to the dividends upon the Company's stock such a proportion of the increased revenue as will astonish Europe and exceed the most sanguine expectations'.[35] Only a month later, however, the same magazine was warning of the potentially disastrous consequences of a commercial body gaining such riches, arguing that the Company could soon 'repeat the same cruelties in this island which have disgraced humanity and deluged with native and innocent blood the plains of India'. For the writer of this article, the only solution was to cut the Company down to size, rallying his readers with a concluding slogan, 'down with that rump of unconstitutional power, the East India Company!'[36]

This duality extended to the Company's own executives, who were equally able to show great sensitivity to Indian culture in their private lives while carrying out acts of terrible exploitation on their employer's behalf. The career of Warren Hastings, who became the Company's first Governor-General of India in 1773, highlights this conflict between the cultural and the commercial. Fluent in local languages, he was a great philanthropist, sponsoring the first English translation of the Hindu *Bhagavad Gita*, supporting a new madrasa for Muslim students in Calcutta and ordering the construction of a Buddhist temple on the banks of the Hugli. Nehru himself argued that 'India owes a deep debt of gratitude' to Company executives such as Hastings and William Jones for helping to rediscover India's heritage.[37] Yet, these cultural interventions were always secondary to Hastings's primary role of generating wealth for the Company and its shareholders. This was the man who monopolised Bengal's salt and opium production for corporate benefit, and ordered the first mission to smuggle opium into China in deliberate defiance of the longstanding import ban. And, in spite of well-founded charges of extortion, bribery and corruption, Hastings would be declared innocent at a marathon impeachment trial by a grateful British

House of Lords. By all accounts an ethical individual, Hastings' career provides an early example of the recurrent corporate story of upstanding executives compelled into unethical practice by a combination of circumstance and institutional necessity.

Just as corporations today should be judged by the impacts of their core business rather than their often peripheral donations to cultural events, so the East India Company has to be assessed on the basis of its underlying activities rather than the occasional philanthropy of its executives. The continuing reluctance to examine the full scope of the East India Company's impacts is part of a more general amnesia about the historical role of business. It remains an oddity that although companies are among the most powerful institutions of the modern age, our histories still focus on the actions of states and individuals, on politics and culture, rather than on corporations, their executives and their impacts. If we are to fully understand our corporate present, then we must understand our corporate past – and this means grappling with the legacy of John Company. Indeed, some of its most vocal critics expected future generations to take just such a hard look at the Company's performance as a corporation. 'Historians of other nations (if not our own)', wrote Richard Clarke in 1773, 'will do justice to the oppressed of India and will hand down the Memory of the Oppressors to the latest Posterity.' In the introduction to his long satirical poem entitled 'The Nabob, or Asiatic Plunders', Clarke urged on his fellow countrymen 'to perpetuate an honest indignation against these enemies of mankind'.[38]

Far from being a dusty relic, the Company exemplifies the constant battle within corporations between the logic of exchange and the desire for domination. Two centuries on, it demonstrates that the quest for corporate accountability is a perpetual exercise in directing the energies of merchants and entrepreneurs so that their private passions do not undermine the public interest. The continuing clash of perceptions between corporate activists in India and imperial romantics in Britain underlines the need for some 'honest indignation' once more to comprehend the scale of the Company's impacts. To borrow a couplet from the nineteenth-century Urdu poet Asadullah Khan Ghalib, who saw his beloved Delhi destroyed in 1858, *zakhm gardab gaya, lahu na thama*, 'though the wound is hidden, the blood does not cease to flow'.

2
This Imperious Company

For hundreds of years, commodities, peoples and ideas have washed in and out of London's docks. In its time, the East India Company was one of the primary engines of this interchange. The docks were the place where the Company's commercial supremacy was felt most tangibly, and if you want to assess the Company's former greatness, London's docks are a good place to start.

Heading east from London's financial district lies Poplar, and on its High Street stands St Matthias Church. Erected by the East India Company as its chapel in 1654, this was where the Company's directors, workers and sailors went to care for their souls. Nondescript, even ugly on the outside following nineteenth-century renovations, the church is airy and cool within. Eight columns, seven of oak and one of stone, define the central space, and high up on the ceiling the Company's crest – or logo – stands out, a shield with three merchant ships sailing East. Now deconsecrated, the church buildings are run in trust for the diverse communities of the area – indigenous English and immigrant Bangladeshi, Caribbean and Chinese. Outside, St Matthias stands in the shadow of the new financial centre of Canary Wharf, whose huge towers carry the logos of some of today's corporate giants, Barclays, Citigroup and HSBC.

Less than a mile east of St Matthias is the site of the Company's docks at Blackwall (see Illustration 2.1). The original one and a half acre plot was first constructed in 1612, and soon became a thriving commercial area. By 1620, the Company was managing a fleet of 10,000 tonnes, operated by over 2,500 sailors and maintained by 500 ships' carpenters. It was here that the oceangoing 'East Indiamen' ships were built and fitted out. After 1637, the Company stopped building and owning its own ships, and leased them from a variety of ships' masters. Once completed, the Company's ships would sail down past Deptford, turn into the Channel and head for Asia. If successful, the ship would be back in London two or more years later. By the end of the eighteenth century, the average length of the voyage from India or China back to London was 114 days.[1]

Illustration 2.1 William Daniell, *East India Docks*, 1808

On their return, the ships were unloaded in Blackwall Reach, and their cargoes taken upriver to the Legal Quays, where they would be unloaded and carted through the streets to the Company's nearby warehouses. But as the ships increased in size during the eighteenth century, they had to anchor in deeper water at Blackwall.

To cope with their ever-increasing volumes of commodities, the Brunswick Basin was constructed in 1789, covering a full eight acres. All around lay a vast industrial complex, supplying the ships from nearby timber yards, foundries, rope works, bakeries and gunpowder mills. The centrepiece was the 120 foot-high Mast House, regarded as one of the technological marvels of the day, where the tall masts for the Company's ships were pieced together. Nearby were the pubs and tenements that served the Company's workforce, along with the Poplar chapel and the Company's almshouse to care for poor sailors. Unlike East India House, many of whose inhabitants, such as Charles Lamb and John Stuart Mill, still retain their identity, the thousands of Company employees who operated the East India Docks are for the most part anonymous.

This is particularly true of the Indian sailors, or *lascars*, who by 1700 made up about a quarter of the crews sailing the East Indiamen to and from Asia. All sailors of the time faced appalling conditions on board ship, enduring rotten food, disease and brutal punishments. But the *lascars* suffered additionally. Once landed in London, they were often abandoned by their ships' masters and left to roam destitute through the streets. By the 1780s, many in London were outraged by *lascar* misery, calling it a 'disgrace to humanity' and 'the utmost discredit to a country universally distinguished for its humanity'.[2] One of those affected was John Lemon, a 29-year-old hairdresser and cook from Bengal who married an Englishwoman, Elizabeth. As the numbers of poor *lascars* grew, the authorities hatched a plan to resettle them in Sierra Leone along with African-American loyalists from the American War of Independence. We know that Lemon and his wife survived the voyage out, and were alive a year later, but after that they are lost to history. *Lascars* continued to live in the East End, however, confined to unwholesome barracks in Shoreditch and Shadwell. Today, a third of the population of the Docklands area of Tower Hamlets is of Bangladeshi origin, the result of late twentieth-century immigration from the subcontinent. But through the *lascars* that sailed the Company's ships, Bengal's links with London extend far deeper into Britain's past.

As is so often the case with monumental architecture, the East India Docks reached their most perfect expression just as the Company's commercial rationale was coming to an end. Following in the wake of the ambitious West India Dock project, the triumphal East India Dock was opened in August 1806, with a massive new 16-acre Import Dock, which could hold over eighty 800-tonne ships. The dock was built like a fortress, with 20-foot high perimeter walls, some of which still stand, along with a prison inside for 'thieves, radicals and French agents', according to a panel at the nearby Museum in Docklands. The East India Company also paid for the construction of a new highway – the Commercial Road – to take its imports into the heart of the City.

Soon afterwards, however, the first blow against the Company's monopoly was struck, with the removal of the Company's exclusive trading rights with India in 1813. Twenty years later, in 1833, its treasured monopoly over the tea trade with China was also eliminated. In all, between 1600 and 1833, ships sailing under the Company's colours had made about 4,600 voyages from London to Asia.[3] The docks were sold, but continued in use under different ownership until 1943, when the Import Dock was pumped dry and filled with bomb rubble to act as a base for building the Mulberry Harbours used in the D-Day landings. After the war, the Export Dock was finally closed to traffic in 1967. Decades later, the East India complex has now become part of the resurgent Docklands, covered with apartment buildings and office blocks. The names of the new streets that run on top of the old docks – Clove Crescent and Nutmeg Lane – reveal something of its former purpose. Part of the outer basin still contains water, and has been reconstituted as a bird sanctuary where cormorants lazily dry their wings. A few dejected signs give descriptions of the size of the dock's lock-gates: 'four foot longer than any other lock on the Thames'. But nothing tells the story of the millions of tonnes of produce that passed through these gates, the wealth that was generated and the exploitation that so often accompanied it.

A MODEL CORPORATION

The Company that built these docks was the model for the multinational enterprise – 'the greatest corporation in the world', according to Victorian historian, poet and Indian administrator, Thomas Babington Macaulay.[4] Throughout its long life as a trading concern, it confronted and overcame many of the timeless questions

facing business enterprise: how to keep employees motivated, customers satisfied, shareholders happy and society content. For K.N. Chaudhuri, one of its most insightful historians, 'the East India Company was the direct ancestor of the modern giant business firm, handling a multitude of trading products and operating in an international setting'.[5]

The East India Company was one of a number of companies granted a royal charter by the British state to take advantage of the opportunities opened up by the age of European expansion and exploration. Some of these directed their attentions eastwards, such as the Muscovy (1555) and Levant (1581) Companies. A succession of companies – including the Company of Royal Adventurers (1663) and the Royal African Company (1672) – were also founded to exploit the slave trade. Others focused on settlement and commerce in the New World, notably the Virginia (1606) and Hudson Bay (1670) Companies. Most of these were wound up centuries ago, but the Hudson Bay Company lives on as one of Canada's largest department stores.

Unlike the pioneers of the Asia trade, the Portuguese, who adopted a wholly state-led strategy, or the Dutch, who introduced a mixed public–private model, the English pushed forward a private sector strategy for tapping the wealth of the East. What makes the English East India Company special is the way it bridged the medieval concept of the corporation as an essentially public body with the industrial model of an enterprise acting primarily in the interests of its shareholders. In the rising commercial world of sixteenth-century England, the chartered company brought together a number of institutional ingredients. The Crown had a long tradition of setting up corporations as independent bodies to manage public services, such as municipalities and universities, like Oxford and Cambridge. Indeed, the local government of London's financial district is still managed by the Corporation of London, whose electors include businesses as well as citizens. From Italy came the invention of the *compagnia*, a name deriving from the Latin phrase for the act of sharing bread, *cum panis*. This was essentially a family firm, where fathers, brothers, sons and other relatives would pool their labour and capital.[6]

In England, the first generation of chartered companies brought together a band of merchants who would then buy and sell goods under a common umbrella. These regulated companies operated more akin to a guild, setting standards for a chosen field of endeavour, and collecting fees for shared services, such as docks

and warehouses. Where the East India Company differed was in its fusion of the institutional structure of the public corporation with the financial mechanism of joint stock ownership.[7] Unlike earlier regulated companies, the East India Company was established as 'one body corporate and politick'. This brought a whole series of financial and organisational benefits, which were especially valuable for the long-distance trade to the East Indies. Capital costs were high in terms of both shipping and the bullion required to buy homebound goods. In addition, risks were extreme, both natural and political, with a high likelihood of the loss of some or all of the investment.

The joint stock mechanism provided a solution to this challenge. First, it enabled a separation of investors and managers, thus broadening the pool of capital that could be tapped to include both City merchants as well as passive investors from elsewhere in the moneyed elite. Second, risks were shared widely: if profits were made, then dividends could be disbursed, but if losses were incurred, investors would only be liable up to the nominal value of their paid-in capital. This limited liability endowed the Company with a special dynamism, substantially reducing the risks for investors compared with the usual partnership model of ownership. Third, trading was conducted by the joint stock company on its own account, rather than by the members themselves. This gave the Company a separate identity and its own legal personality – one that could conduct business strategies that went beyond the interests of individual merchants. It also gave it a unique institutional structure when confronting the merchant partnerships and states of Asia.

The Company's basic joint stock model evolved in significant ways over successive decades. Initially, the Company constructed separate joint stocks for each voyage, whereby investors would decide to allocate capital on a case-by-case basis. Only in 1657 did the Company become a permanent joint stock corporation, a 'continuous unlimited investment taking place without reference to individual voyages'.[8] This provided the basis for shares in the Company to be valued and exchanged at its headquarters in Leadenhall Street. Later, trading in India stock moved to the courtyard of London's Royal Exchange. When this proved too cramped, dealing shifted across Cornhill to the coffee houses of the Exchange or 'Change Alley until the formal establishment of the London Stock Exchange in 1773.

Like the modern corporation, the Company's share price was its heart-beat, communicating to the world the market's estimates of its

future prospects. For the jobbers clustered around Exchange Alley, the Company's stock – along with its bonds and annuities – became the bellwether for the market as a whole. From the 1690s, its share price graph for the next 180 years would be dominated by a series of peaks and troughs, reflecting both the state of its commerce and the health of its relations with governments at home and abroad. Looking at the graph today (Figure 2.1, p. 31), what is striking is how it starts out with a significant drop in value. Following the Glorious Revolution of 1688, the 1690s was a period of ferocious speculation. For the Company, its share price peaked in 1693, and then fell for the next five years as successive parliamentary inquiries exposed corruption and proposed potentially disastrous remedies. The low point was in 1698 when a rival company was established, sending the Company's shares with a nominal value of £100 down to a mere £39. By the turn of the century, the threat had been seen off, and prices had returned to well over £100 once more, rising to over £200 in 1717.

Along with the rest of the market, the Company's shares then became caught up in the market mania that followed the end of war in 1713 and subsequently came to be known as the South Sea Bubble. The price of Company stock doubled from £200 at the end of 1719 to £420 in June 1720, before collapsing to £150 in the following summer. Yet while this spike was extreme, the underlying vitality of the East India Company can be seen in the way that its share price continued a slow, but steady climb once the South Sea crisis had abated. But the next surge was all its own making. From 1757 to 1769, its shares more than doubled to reach £276. But in a crisis that almost cost it its independence, the Company's share price continued on a downward path for the next 15 years, ultimately halving in value.

The big fear that drove markets was that parliament would take a savage revenge on the Company, even removing the board of directors and replacing it with its own appointees. As we shall see in Chapter 7, when this threat was removed in 1784, the Company's financial fortunes recovered, and its shares began to rise once more. Deepening state intervention into the Company's affairs also brought some surprising benefits for the Company's shareholders, with the government increasingly guaranteeing a high level of dividends, making the stock a truly attractive investment after the mayhem of the 1760s. Buoyed by the surge in share prices that followed the end of the Napoleonic War in 1815, the Company's shares reached a third peak of £298 in April 1824. From this point on, the value of

the Company's stock rarely slipped below £200, the generous level at which the government had agreed to buy out Company stock. Finally, on 30 April 1874, the stock was liquidated and Company's financial heart stopped beating.

GOVERNING THE COMPANY

The Company's joint stock identity merely provided a platform for commercial operations, but gave no guarantee of success. What made the Company's fortune was its management framework, which had achieved a distinctive shape by the early eighteenth century.

The English Company borrowed many features with its Dutch rival, the VOC. Both aimed to dominate the same markets in the East and both had strictly hierarchical systems of administration, supported by a small army of clerks – known as writers in England, a term derived from the Dutch *shcruyvers*. But in their structures of finance and governance, they were strikingly different. The VOC was the result of a state-backed merger. This gave control to a set of directors chosen by its six provincial chambers – Amsterdam, Middelburg, Hoorn, Enkhuizen, Delft and Rotterdam; in Amsterdam's case, their representatives on the board were nominated by the burgomasters and appointed for life. The directors had to hold a substantial portion of VOC stock, but there the link with the shareholding base ended. As a business, the VOC was based on the *commenda* model of general partnership, which separated function and control between active directors and passive shareholders. The VOC's ordinary shareholders (*participanten*) provided the capital, but had no say either in the choice of those who would manage their investment or in the direction of policy. The well-developed status of the Dutch stock market meant, however, that almost from the beginning shares could be publicly traded, something that would take a century to establish across the North Sea in London.[9] In the modern jargon, if unhappy, the *participanten* had 'exit' but no 'voice'. As a result, the VOC might well have been a mighty company, but it was not a fully-fledged joint stock corporation. The absence of any shareholder rights over the directors who managed their investment would explode into open conflict when the VOC's charter came up for renewal in 1622, with its 'dissenting participants' citing the EIC as a model which united capital with control.[10]

By contrast, the English company's corporate form gave its shareholders not only a financial stake, but the franchise, making them almost like constituents of an eighteenth-century parliamentary

borough. Like the England that gave it birth, the Company operated as a limited, property-based democracy, one that was run by and for its shareholders. Just as the right to vote in Georgian England was restricted to those with property, so the Company's shareholders had to have £500 of nominal stock before they could vote either in the quarterly meetings of the Court of Proprietors held in March, June, September and December, or at the annual meeting in April. This was the high point of the Company's calendar when over a thousand shareholders would gather to elect a slate of 24 directors. No matter how large a shareholding, each individual with more than £500 in stock only had one vote, a surprising expression of financial egalitarianism. In turn, only shareholders with over £2,000 in stock – the mercantile aristocracy – could put themselves forward as candidates to be a director. This directorial elite would then choose from among their number a chairman and deputy chairman. Until 1709, the chairman went by the name of governor and directors were known as committees.

Power was held within a relatively narrow group of affluent merchants on the Court of Directors. But shareholders had the right to override executive decisions taken by the directors up until 1784. Not for nothing were the annual meetings of the shareholders described as 'little parliaments' by William Pitt the Elder.[11] Meeting quarterly to hear the directors' reports and vote on corporate policy, the shareholders were particularly vigilant in sustaining high rates of dividend payments. Alongside the dividend, shareholding also gave investors access to the Company's vast network of economic opportunities, notably jobs. The 24 directors controlled the Company's system of patronage, enabling them to place friends, relatives and business partners in key positions, a gift that became increasingly valuable in the second half of the eighteenth century.

Compared with the twentieth-century corporation in the UK, the East India Company's structures of governance gave shareholders considerably greater powers (see Table 2.1). The entire Court of Directors was elected on an annual basis, and the successful directors then guided the business for the year ahead. Importantly, following the financial crisis of 2007–08, the UK's corporate governance code was reformed to require the annual election of all directors in order to bring greater accountability of the board – something that was in place at the East India Company in the eighteenth century. Another major difference was the absence of a chief executive – although there were a company secretary, accountant and auditor. Today's distinction between executive and

non-executive directors also did not exist. In essence, all directors became executive upon election. The use of non-executive directors to protect the rights of shareholders from management capture had yet to be introduced – with the assumption that making directors hold a minimum of £2,000 in stock would align their interests with the wider investor base.

Table 2.1 Corporate governance compared

	East India Company, c. 1709	*Modern UK company, c. 2011*
Formation	Crown charter, for limited period	General incorporation, unlimited life
Voting rights	'One shareholder, one vote'	'One share, one vote'
Number of directors	24	10–20
Election of directors	Annual election of entire board	Annual election of entire board, introduced in 2010
Director qualifications	More than £2,000 in shares	De minimis or no shareholding qualification
Election of chairman	Indirect election, chosen by directors	Indirect election, chosen by directors
Board composition	All part-time executives	Majority non-executive, plus executive directors
Board limitations	Maximum four consecutive years; return after one year out	Three-year term, usually two terms

Note: Data for modern company taken from practices of the largest five companies on the London Stock Exchange in 2011 and the UK Corporate Governance Code.

The Court of Directors oversaw the operations of a rigorously hierarchical administrative system. At the pinnacle sat the chairman, who ran the weekly board meetings of the 24 directors, which took place each Wednesday. Each director was assigned to one of ten committees that looked after different dimensions of the Company's operations. Among these, three committees were regarded as supreme: Correspondence, which handled all the communications with the Company's far-flung subsidiaries; Treasury, which managed relations with financial markets, buying bullion and paying dividends; and Accounts, which aimed to maintain financial discipline. In addition, there were committees for buying commodities, warehousing, shipping, managing East India House, regulating (and preventing) private trade and lawsuits. Alongside these was the all-powerful Secret Committee, which defined the Company's political and military strategy in times of war.

From East India House, the directors would send precise orders to their overseas subsidiaries covering the quantity, quality and price of goods to be purchased. In the case of textiles, this could cover details such as the type of thread, weave, colour, pattern, stiffness and packing. These orders were implemented by a system of autonomous presidencies, headed by a president (or governor), who controlled the operations of his particular port or factory, as well as smaller outposts in his zone of operations. Although East India House laid down clear parameters on the content of its commerce, it gave considerable freedom to local management to determine how these goals were to be achieved, including in their relations with host governments. As the fortunes of trade fluctuated, so different presidencies took the lead. The Mughal Empire's port of Surat on the west coast of India and Bantam in the Spice Islands (now Indonesia) were the first to be established. As these declined in importance, so Bombay, Madras and Calcutta grew in the latter part of the seventeenth century. In 1773, the Bengal Presidency, with its capital at Calcutta, was made pre-eminent.

Below the president lay another hierarchy, with promotion strictly by seniority. New recruits would enter the Company's service as 'writers', where they would stay for five years before progressing to the rank of 'factor' for a further three years. This would be followed by promotion to junior and then senior merchant, and thereafter possible selection for their presidency's council, and even governor.

In return, the Company's overseas staff received a minimal salary and the right to conduct private trade on their own account within Asia. This maintained the Company's monopoly over exports to Europe, while giving employees a strong incentive to stay and make their fortune in India.[12] For its executives, the purpose of a career with the Company was to achieve a 'competence', making enough money to be able to retire and adopt the conspicuous consumption patterns of the British landed gentry. This could not be achieved by saving from the salaries received from the Company, which barely covered living expenses. As a result, the ambitious Company man had to use his position as a platform for patronage and private trade. It was the hunger for perquisites (or perks) that drove the Company's executives to adventurism when opportunity allowed. The privilege of private trade also exacerbated the inherent tension between corporation and employee, making staff both executives and entrepreneurs in their own right. Entirely understandable in the context it operated in, this system of private trade created a second

tier of divided loyalties, which would ultimately spawn an army of cuckoo businesses operating in the heart of the corporate machine.

For the most part, however, the Company's managerial structures and human resources were utilised to drive a highly focused business model. The East India Company was essentially a trading enterprise in the import–export business. Compared with Dutch VOC, the English Company proved more adept at moving into new markets, shifting from pepper to textiles and then to tea. From time immemorial, merchants had wished to 'buy cheap and sell dear', in the words of St Augustine. This was a strategy that the East India Company sought to apply by minimising the amount of goods – notably bullion – sent to the East, keeping the costs of supply as low as possible, and then maximising the price of goods sold at auction back in England. The Company outsourced as much as it could, not least the manufacture of goods in the East, its shipping, as well as the ultimate retailing of its products. The value it added to the process was in the selection of goods and the efficiency of delivery. In a situation characterised by extremely poor information, the Company's strength lay in its ability to achieve an equilibrium between supply and demand on opposite sides of the planet.[13]

A WORLD OF DIFFERENCE

Such characteristics make the Company immediately recognisable as a close relative of the modern multinational. Yet it is also important to acknowledge the considerable differences that separate its world from ours, extending from often mundane matters to fundamental structural factors. Unlike today's globalised world of air freight and instantaneous communication, for the Company a round trip from London to India and back could take up to two years. Not only was considerable capital locked up in the voyages of these 'East Indiamen', but the exchange of information was also woefully slow, making planning and management exceptionally tough. The risks the Company faced were equally acute, not just from shipwrecks and pirates, but also from disease. Over half of its employees posted to Asia died while in service.

A more structural difference was the Company's status as a state-chartered enterprise. Today, people regard the ability to establish a company as a basic right in democratic market economies. In the Company's time, however, this was a special privilege granted by the Crown (and later Parliament). Charters would generally be awarded only for ventures that mixed private interest with a broader public

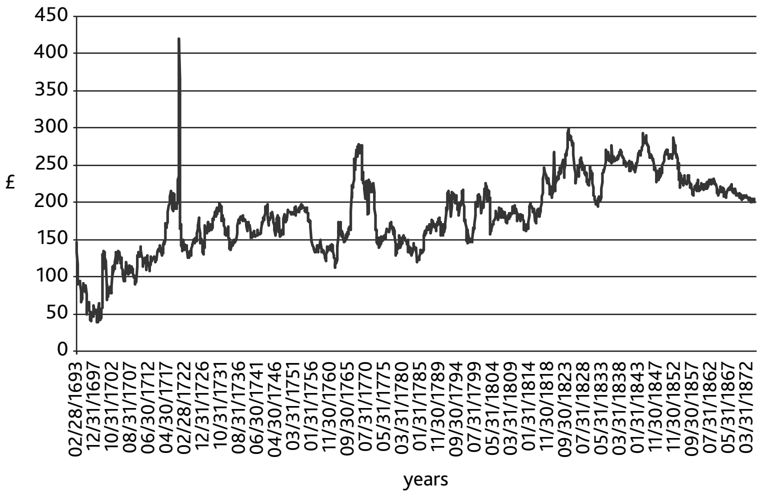


Figure 2.1 The Company's share price 1693–1874

purpose – which in the Company's case was to ensure that England gained a slice of the lucrative Asia trade. As one commentator put it in 1767, the Company was a 'national object' and 'the members of it bound to attend to the interest of the public as well as their own'.[14] This bargain with the state also had a limited life, and the Company's charter had to be renewed at regular, usually 20-year intervals. The Crown retained the right to revoke the charter if it judged that the Company had broken its terms and conditions. One of the few surviving examples of this model of the chartered corporation is the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC), whose charter was renewed in 2007.[15] Unlike today's technically immortal multinationals, the East India Company was on constant life support, repeatedly having to justify its existence to the state, pointing to the healthy customs revenues it earned and the plump presents it could provide.

As part of its charter, the Company gained a whole series of special rights, including the right to mint coin in its overseas subsidiaries, to exercise justice in its settlements and, crucially, the right to wage war. Indeed, the Company's private army evolved from a security service to defend its overseas warehouses to being the principal tool for territorial acquisition. The most valuable privilege of all, however, was the monopoly awarded to this London-based corporation of all trade between England and the lands beyond the Cape of Good Hope. This gave the Company's investors extra

confidence by creating a captive home market for its products. In the real-world conditions of global competition, of course, the Company was for many years just one player among many, striving against the Portuguese, the Dutch and the French. It also faced home-grown challenges from so-called interlopers who sought to break its exclusivity, along with the more informal bands of smugglers. Nevertheless, its monopoly powers were real, keeping prices high and ensuring substantial profits for shareholders.

The final distinction between today's giant firms and the East India Company is also derived from the chartering process. In the Company's age, the reliance on state approval for specific commercial privileges meant that it was among a rare breed of corporations, usually numbering fewer than 20 in all of England. A rush of speculative ventures towards the end of the seventeenth century resulted in over 140 joint stock companies by 1695. But most failed to survive, and by 1719, there were only 21 left. The explosion in stock market listings during the first six months of 1720 brought another 174 companies to market. The subsequent failure of the South Sea Company prompted the introduction of the Bubble Act, which forbade formation of further joint stock companies without explicit approval of Parliament, a ban that would remain in force for the next 105 years. This exclusivity made the Company all the more notable in the Georgian economy of the eighteenth century. The Company was a corporate colossus, alone accounting for between 13 and 15 per cent of all Britain's imports between 1699 and 1774.[16] Every seventh pound of goods brought into Britain would be carried on Company ships, unloaded at Company docks and sold in Company auctions, a phenomenal presence in the Enlightenment economy. Today, the corporation is the dominant economic form, a pervasive feature across the globe. But few, if any, can match the individual might of the East India Company.

A BUNDLE OF TENSIONS

Just as the Company pioneered the organisational structures of the modern multinational, it also contained the same bundle of tensions that are inherent in the corporate form. As a corporation, the Company lay at the centre of a web of relationships. Internally, the interactions between owners, executives and employees defined the fundamental direction and dynamic of the business. Externally, fiscal and regulatory relations with states at home and abroad defined the Company's scope for action, while in the marketplace,

its standing with customers, competitors and suppliers determined its chances of success. Ultimately, however, it was the Company's ability to maintain a basis of trust with society at home and abroad that decided its fate – and once this trust was broken, protest, rebellion and, ultimately, removal would follow.

Then and now, it is important to recognise that the corporation is not a neutral force. In the words of Timothy Alborn, an expert on nineteenth-century business, the corporation 'employs a balance of political and economic means to achieve economic ends'.[17] As well as a constant jostling for a share of the commercial rewards of the Company's operations, a more fundamental struggle was always underway to determine positions of power and pre-eminence. For much of the first half of its corporate career, the Company was bringing steady profits for its shareholders, cheap imports for its customers, good prices for its Indian textile suppliers as well as substantial customs revenues for both the British and Asian exchequers.

But this web of relationships also contained the potential for open conflict. In the Company's case, something went radically awry in the 1750s, leading to the violent takeover of Bengal. Its shareholders certainly benefited, but only temporarily. Suppliers were squeezed as the Company exerted a new-found market power, and the struggle with the regulatory authority of host states erupted into open warfare.

Seeking to explain this extraordinary turnaround, many analysts have focused on circumstantial factors, notably the constraints the Company faced in enforcing its will in India owing to the combination of distance and ineffective means of communication. Certainly, the Directors could often find it difficult to impose their will when it clashed with the interests with local executives on the ground. Others highlight the moral failings of key executives, both in London and Asia. Critics then and now have been united in their condemnation of the greed and rapacity demonstrated by Clive and the new class of nabobs that came to control the Company's operations.

Yet circumstance and character are not sufficient explanations of the Company's behaviour. More structural factors were at work. Adam Smith's *Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations* is well-known for its championing of the free market. But it also contains one of the most thoroughgoing investigations into the corporate metabolism. Written in the wake of the Company's conquest of Bengal, Smith dissected the corporation as an institution

and evaluated the factors that led to the East India Company's own particular crisis. Uniquely, Smith was emphatic in downplaying the actions of individuals as the root cause of the problems. 'I mean not to throw any odious imputation upon the general character of the servants of the East India Company,' he wrote, stressing that 'it is the system of government, the situation in which they are placed, that I mean to censure.'[18] The problem for Smith was one of corporate design. Looking across the last five centuries of business history, there are four factors which drive the fundamentals of corporate behaviour: finance, technology, scale and regulation. Each of these factors contain the potential for positive and negative social impacts, and each played out in the Company's tumultuous rise and fall (see Table 2.2).

Table 2.2 The four sources of corporate behaviour

	Positive	*Negative*
1. Finance	Providing capital depth	Fostering speculation through the separation of owners and managers
2. Technology	Enhancing productivity through the structured deployment of innovation	Exploiting society and the environment
3. Scale	Enabling mass production and exchange forcing down costs	Suppressing economic diversity and driving up prices
4. Regulation	Ensuring integrity and public accountability	Fomenting corruption and forging collusion between company and state

FINANCE: IMMEDIATE AND EXCESSIVE RETURNS[19]

As an economic institution, the corporation's financial structure is its primary design feature. The joint stock model enabled the East India Company to draw in investors from across Europe to fund its global commercial infrastructure of ships, warehouses and commodities. This was a distinctively Western institutional innovation and enabled the accumulation of capital across time and space.[20] The model gave the corporation a unifying purpose of promoting the long-term financial returns of the joint stockholders. Capital was attracted by the protection provided by limited liability, controlling losses to the nominal value of the stock. And the separation of owners and managers meant that hereditary owners could be replaced with professional executives.

But this structure also holds the potential for a triple negligence. Together, executives and shareholders can pursue their own financial interests to the detriment of others. Limited liability frees shareholders from the full consequences of careless investments in the pursuit of unlimited lucre. Furthermore, the separation of ownership and control creates the potential for executives to exploit the corporation for their own ends. In the jargon of modern corporate governance, what the corporation creates is a fundamental 'agency problem'. These three financial flaws are not fatal, but need to be consciously and continuously controlled to ensure that the corporation does not become the plaything of shareholders and executives.

It was the speculative behaviour of corporate insiders and short-term investors that emerged as the most powerful factor in the Company's spectacular fall from grace in the middle of the eighteenth-century with catastrophic social results in Asia. Financial engineering, flimsy managerial controls and inadequate regulation all played their part – just as they did in the late 1990s.[21] In the wake of Enron's collapse in November 2001, the Company's much earlier boom-and-bust cycle becomes eerily familiar – the same passion for aggressive acquisitions, the same obsession with exclusive perks for corporate insiders, and the same focus on executive self-preservation as ordinary shareholders started to suffer the consequences of excess. Standards of corporate governance may well have evolved over the past two centuries and systems of private trade eliminated. But the underlying financial forces behind corporate action remain largely intact.

TECHNOLOGY: IN TRADE AS ALSO IN WARFARE[22]

The structured deployment of technology, both in terms of soft technique and tangible hardware, is another distinguishing feature of the modern corporation. If finance provides the potential for corporate power, technology turns this into reality. For the Company, its technological edge was provided by its fleet, perhaps the most sophisticated in the world at the time: 'no finer fleet ever sailed the seas than that which was directed from Leadenhall Street', commented one obviously jealous Royal Navy captain.[23] But it was not just the size and number of the fleet that made the difference. From the beginning, armed force was essential for the Company's ability to gain and sustain access to Asian markets. It was the Company's demonstration of naval superiority over the

Portuguese off Surat in 1612 that paved the way for its first trade concessions from the Mughal Emperor Jahangir, and its military weakness against the Dutch that forced it from Indonesia's spice islands ten years later. Throughout its existence, the Company's directors maintained an ambivalent attitude to the role of military might. A tight concern for limiting overheads meant the directors were continually nervous of military expense, particularly on land, fearing the sunk costs of forts and castles. But the Company also appreciated the value of conducting 'commerce with sword in your hands', in the words of the Company's Governor of Bombay, Gerald Aungier, in 1677. Indeed, according to Kenneth Pomeranz, 'where eighteenth-century European's supposedly superior commercial organizations had to compete with merchants from other Old World regions without using force, their record was mediocre'.[24]

Violence was intrinsic to the Company's success, with its superiority at sea matched by an increasingly acquisitive army. The direct application of violence by today's corporations is thankfully rare – although private military forces are once more on the rise in the shape of companies such as Blackwater. But the links between successful trade and military force remain as powerful as ever. As Thomas Friedman, the *New York Times*'s ebullient promoter of globalisation, explains, the 'hidden hand of the market will never work without a hidden fist'. In simple terms, 'McDonald's cannot flourish without McDonnell Douglas, the designer of F-15s'.[25] In the Company's time, commerce and violence were necessarily integrated into its core technology, the 'East Indiaman'. More broadly, it is technology that defines many of the impacts that corporations have on both people and nature, impacts that are invariably magnified by financial imperatives and scale.

SCALE: THE MONOPOLISING SPIRIT OF MERCHANTS[26]

The Company was famous for its size and its global reach. Scale has a multiplier effect – creating the potential for both greater commercial rewards as well as greater threats to economic diversity and political accountability. One of the main prizes that the Company sought from the British state was a market monopoly over trade with the East. Like many modern multinationals, the Company was eager to avoid the mere interplay of supply and demand. The Company jealously guarded its exclusive rights over imports from Asia, lobbying and bribing the authorities to retain the barriers to entry that defined its charter. It also wanted to eliminate competition in

Asia so that it could force down the costs of supply. By controlling both ends of the chain, the Company could guarantee high profits for its shareholders. Negotiation was the preferred method of achieving market dominion. But, if required, it would use both force and fraud.

Outside the state sector, few companies today have similar monopoly privileges, except those managing infrastructure utilities, such as energy, telecoms, transport and water. But two decades of global deregulation has resulted in economically damaging and politically dangerous levels of corporate concentration. Over 60 per cent of international commerce now takes place within corporations rather than in the open marketplace, making it idle to talk of free markets.

For all the efforts to liberalise the world economy, the current pattern of global commerce is better described as one of corporate trade – a situation with great similarities to the Company's own day. Liberalisation has resulted not in open markets, but often in corporations that are 'too big to fail'. In such situations, there is no need for the formal grant of monopoly, which the East India Company fought so strenuously to secure.

REGULATION: SETTING JUSTICE AT DEFIANCE[27]

The corporation is a public institution, with the capacity for great benefit, but also great harm. Throughout its history, a variety of mechanisms have been used to control its behaviour. Self-regulation through a corporate culture that gives primacy to integrity is an essential first step, and the Company was clear in the expectations it had of its employees. Each of its merchants had to sign a covenant of good behaviour, backed by a bond and the threat of dismissal for malpractice. This was strengthened in 1764, when the Company introduced a ban on the receipt of gifts above a certain level, one of the first corporate codes of ethics.

But these internal measures proved wholly insufficient in the face of the organised looting that erupted after the acquisition of the *diwani*, with senior executives leading the charge for personal benefit. Social regulation can also be delivered through an active civil society, exposing corporate failings and promoting best practice. As this book will show, the Company was the focus of vigorous pressure from pamphleteers and playwrights as well as industrial forces seeking to protect their interests from its economic hegemony.

Yet it is public regulation that is essential to protect the corporation from its own worst instincts and deliver public as well as private benefit. For the Company, managing this regulatory process was essential both in London and in Asia. At home, the English Crown and then Parliament possessed the power of corporate life and death. The state not only set the boundaries of its commercial operations, but laid down the fiscal bargain that would govern the distribution of the Company's surplus. Overseas, the Company had to establish first the right to trade and then extract favourable terms of trade. Like today's multinationals, the Company often succeeded in winning sizeable trading privileges and tax breaks, often placing it at a distinct advantage compared with local traders. But the Company also repeatedly probed the limits of these trade treaties, promoting illegal private trade in Bengal and arranging industrial scale opium smuggling between India and China.

The Company's great strength lay in its ability to generate extra revenues for the low-income states of the pre-industrial world. Sizeable loans to the British Crown and large-scale bullion imports into Mughal India made the Company indispensable. For the merchants who managed the Company, the arrangement of royal charters at home and imperial decrees (*firmans*) abroad was all part of the wider business of buying and selling. The Company's executives viewed these documents as financial transactions that established contractual rights that could not be infringed. What the Company sought was a zone of commercial sovereignty that ensured it free rein to operate as it wished. Giving presents to princes and paying bribes to parliamentarians were simply part of the fundamental costs of business.

Curbing the Company's corruption was a shared task of states in East and West. But success was profoundly limited by a powerful tendency to collusion. The Company could try to physically buy-off its opposition, but more insidious was its ability to convince the state that its interests were entwined with those of this cuckoo corporation. Faced with this merger of corporate and state interests, what infuriated the Company's contemporaries most through the seventeenth, eighteenth and nineteenth centuries was its impunity, its ability to shrug off the consequences of its actions. For a corollary to the Company's speculative drive for market dominion was its willingness to engage in immense crimes, safe in the knowledge that domestic and international remedies were not in place. A large part of the problem lay in the legal void at the time, with courts in both Europe and Asia wholly ill-equipped to bring corporations and

their executives to account. This – as we shall see – did not stop the Company's contemporaries from trying.

Today, the globalisation of markets has still not been matched by an equivalent globalisation of justice. Compared with the immense political capital that has been expended in recent decades to liberalise international trade, precious little has been done to ensure that common human rights are respected and enforced. Special tribunals have been established to judge some of the more outrageous instances of crimes against humanity. Sadly, the courageous initiative to end the global impunity of individuals through an international criminal court has been hampered by the unilateral opposition of the USA. And in the corporate sphere, Union Carbide has yet to be held to account for the 1984 toxic release at its Bhopal facility in India, which has killed 22,000 and resulted in around 100,000 people still suffering chronic and debilitating illnesses. More than a quarter of a century on, Union Carbide – along with the governments of India and the United States – have failed to comply with their obligations to bring the perpetrators to justice or provide adequate compensation to the victims.[28]

THE IMPERIAL GENE

These four forces combine to shape corporate behaviour. Like an imperial gene, the hunt for economic conquest lies buried deep within a corporation's DNA. For much of the time, this impulse may be dormant, with the corporation simply too small to dominate others, for example. But when circumstances allow, it will seek expression until halted once more, not just risking social harm but the long-term interests of the corporation itself.

This prospect was not lost on the Company's contemporaries in Europe, Asia and the Americas. By the late 1760s, it had become a domineering threat to liberty – in the words of the *Gentleman's Magazine* – the 'imperious company of East India merchants'.[29] And yet we know that the apparent supremacy glorified in Spiridione Roma's huge tableau did not last. The Company quickly became over-extended financially and operationally, eventually resulting in its extinction as a commercial concern. For all its commercial sophistication and organisational complexity, the classical corporation lacks any intrinsic mechanism to hold it back from pursuing its own aggrandisement, nothing to say 'this is enough'.

Here lies the fundamental tragedy of the corporate form, the absence of an impulse for self-restraint that can temper its inherent

drive for power. The very same year that it was being accused of imperious conduct, the Company Secretary, Robert James, was somewhat disingenuously telling Parliament that 'we don't want conquest and power; it is commercial interest only we look for'.[30] A more accurate statement would have been 'it is commercial interest only we seek, for which we are willing to consider conquest'. A hundred years later, as he reviewed Parliament's debates on the Company's final charter in the summer of 1853, Karl Marx put his finger on the essence of the Company's strategy, stating that it had 'conquered India to make money out of it'.[31] And, yet to invert Marx's famous quip, the Company's first attempt at conquest ended in farce, only to be followed much later by tragic success in 1757.

3
Out of the Shadows

THE ODOURS OF THE SPICY ORIENT

Looming above the down-at-heel shops and cafés that line Oude Hoogstraat in Amsterdam today stands the mighty Oostindisch Huis. This impressive three-storey brick-built edifice was the headquarters of the Verenigde Oostindische Compagnie (VOC) from 1606 to 1799, and still bears the company's monogram above its entrance. Perhaps it is the long-standing Dutch commitment to the environment that explains how the building has now been recycled to host a faculty of Amsterdam University. Sociologists lecture where the Heren XVII – the Company's board of directors – once met to determine business strategy.[1] What is striking about the humdrum atmosphere that now hangs over Oostindisch Huis is how this and other relics of the Company's past are still clearly visible parts of Amsterdam's landscape. A replica VOC ship – appropriately named *The Amsterdam* – is even moored beside the city's maritime museum, a far cry from the erasure of memory evidenced over the water in London.

For a hundred years, the VOC was the arbiter of European trade relations with Asia, overshadowing the efforts of its English namesake in both the scale and scope of its operations. The Dutch had been the first of the North European nations to break the Portuguese maritime monopoly of the Asian spice trade, with the Compagnie van Verre (Company of Distant Lands) sending its fleet to the East in 1595. Over the next six years, eight rival companies sent 15 fleets to tap the spice islands of Indonesia. Competition proved good both for the spice producers, who saw increased purchase prices, as well as Dutch consumers, who enjoyed falling sale prices. But it was a disaster for investors, and so, on 20 March 1602, the various companies put their differences aside and merged into a single body. The united company received a monopoly over all trade with Asia – just like the English Company – and worked diligently to channel trade for its own benefit.

Although England had launched its own East India Company two years earlier, the VOC had ten times the capital base, and quickly

achieved a dominant position. It became the first joint stock to trade its shares on an open market, and in its lifetime the VOC would pay out 3,600 per cent in dividends based on the initial investment in 1602.[2] It took the lead in displaying its pre-eminence through the art it chose to commission for its headquarters, decorating its Great Hall with paintings depicting its Asian trading posts from Cochin on the Malabar coast of India, to Ayuthya in Thailand, Banda Neira in the Moluccas and on to Canton in China. Passers-by could also experience the Company's prestige in other ways as the aroma of the commodities stored within filtered into the street. For the poet Joost van der Vondel:

> The rich East Indies House grows addict, tired and drear
> And brings the odours of the spicy Orient near.[3]

Step by step, combining financial acumen with colonial brutality, the VOC achieved mastery of the Asia trade, managing fleets of more than a hundred ships and returning a fortune to its six founding cities. Jan Pieterszoon Coen, who had established Batavia (modern Jakarta) as the VOC's capital in Asia, symbolised the single-minded commercial aggression that brought it such success. Writing back to the Heren XVII in 1619, he was adamant that 'we cannot carry on trade without war, nor war without trade'.[4] Violence in the East was matched by corruption at home. Just 20 years after its foundation angry investors forced the directors to publish the accounts and introduce a modicum of responsiveness to shareholder concerns. For the next century, the VOC outstripped its English rival. But in the eighteenth century, it failed to diversify its product range and was weakened from within by administrative sclerosis and fraud. By the end of the century, its three initials were being used by critics to spell out its doom 'Vergann onder Corruptie'– 'perished by corruption'. Expelled from India by its English namesake, the rest of the VOC's Asian operations became untenable following the last Anglo-Dutch war in the 1780s, and, in 1799, the Compagnie ceased to exist.

COMMERCIAL SUPPLICANT

Understanding the VOC is essential if the English Company is to be seen in context. Indeed, the EIC was just one of many competing India companies launched by the nations of Europe in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. These ranged from important ventures from France and Denmark, as well as lesser operations

launched from Genoa, Ostend, Prussia, Russia, Sweden, Spain and Trieste. And for the first half of its existence, the English Company was the commercial supplicant, its trade with Asia at the mercy of both local rulers and rival Europeans.

When the London-based Company was established in 1600, Europe continued to live in the economic shadow of Asia, with England operating as one of its more marginal kingdoms. Spices and other luxury goods had been imported from Asia into Europe for thousands of years, carried overland across the Middle East. It was a trade dominated by local merchants, with Europeans in a dependent position at the end of the chain. The Ottoman capture of Constantinople in 1453 exposed this vulnerability, giving the Turks control of the Mediterranean and thus the ability to limit Europe's access to pepper and other spices, such as cloves, nutmeg, cinnamon and mace. So essential was pepper as a way of making preserved meat edible that the race was on to find alternative routes to the source of supply. The Spanish headed west across the Atlantic, and 'the Americas were discovered as a by-product in the search for pepper'.[5] The Portuguese sailed south along the coast of Africa and around the Cape of Good Hope. While Columbus presented a New World to the King and Queen of Spain, it was the Portuguese who successfully fulfilled their mission and found the source of the spice trade. Ironically, it would be silver from Spanish mines in the New World that would provide the bullion to pay for Europe's maritime imports of spice. In the two centuries after 1600, about one-third of the silver produced in America found its way to Asia to pay for Europe's imports.[6]

The arrival of Vasco da Gama's Portuguese fleet off Calicut (Kozikhode) in May 1498 marked a violent break with longstanding tradition of free trade in the Indian Ocean. When asked by an Arab trader why he had come, da Gama responded with precision, 'we seek Christians and spices'.[7] He found both, but focused his attention on filling his ships with pepper for the voyage home. Not content with being one trading nation among many, da Gama and his successors used their naval supremacy to impose a commercial monopoly in the Indian Ocean. Only merchants who bought Portuguese permits were allowed to do business on pain of confiscation and death, a measure justified on the grounds that the right to free trade was limited to Christians.[8] In a brutal extension of the wars of religion that raged between Christianity and Islam in the Mediterranean, the Portuguese enforced their monopoly with a savagery hitherto unknown in the region.

On his second voyage in 1502, da Gama dispensed with any attempt at negotiation. A large merchant ship bringing back 700 pilgrims from Mecca was taken, primed with gunpowder and sunk. He then moved on to Calicut, capturing 20 trading vessels and butchering their crews. More than 800 prisoners had their hands, ears and noses hacked off, the pieces piled into a boat and sent to the local ruler, the Zamorin, with a note telling him to make a 'curry' with what he found.[9] In light of these and other incidents, the economic historian Niels Steengaard has concluded that 'the principal export of pre-industrial Europe to the rest of the world was violence'.[10]

The Portuguese impact on the economies of the Indian Ocean should not be overstated. What is clear, however, is that for decades thereafter, Portugal's *Estado do India* would dominate European imports of pepper, accounting for as much as 75 per cent until the 1580s.[11] This was a state-managed affair, run from Portugal's Asian capital at Goa and a suite of bases across the Indian Ocean from Mozambique via Malacca to Macau. Portuguese dominance would, however, be ruined by religion – from within by the horrors of the Inquisition and from without by the insurgent Protestant Dutch. When he died in 1525, Vasco da Gama was buried in St Francis Church in Fort Cochin. Today, his grave is empty, but his memory lives on with a mural in the lobby of the Indian Government's Spice Board in Cochin, a peculiar choice for someone once described as 'a fiend in human form'.[12]

LOSING THE SPICE RACE

For a brief moment in the sixteenth century, the kingdoms of Spain and Portugal were united, bringing together their immense overseas territories in the New World, along with dominion over the Netherlands in north-west Europe. But Protestant revolt in the Netherlands led to the blockade of Antwerp, and the closure of Lisbon and Seville to Dutch traders, cutting off their spice supply. The Dutch response was rapid, and the successful return of Dutch ships laden with pepper in 1599 sent shockwaves through London's markets. The price of pepper almost tripled, rising from three to eight shillings a pound,[13] prompting a band of London merchants to petition Queen Elizabeth for exclusive trading rights. In many ways, the new company was seen as a spin-off of the well-established Levant Company, which saw its business threatened by the Dutch coup. 'This trading to the Indies', warned William Aldrich, 'have

clean overthrown our dealings to Aleppo.'[14] Over £30,000 was raised to back the venture, which had a strikingly simple mission – 'let us be sole masters of the pepper trade',[15] declared the merchants. After much haggling the ailing queen eventually relented, awarding a charter on the last day of 1600, with the objective of bringing back valuable commodities from the East Indies, which should be 'bought, bartered, procured, exchanged, or otherwise obtained'. Alongside the pursuit of mercantile profit, Elizabeth's charter inserted the public policy goal of the 'advancement of trade'. In the end, the 218 investors who came together under this banner raised a total of £68,373 to finance a fleet of four small ships, which set sail in February 1601 to find an English niche in this lucrative business.

Their focus was the spice islands that now form modern Indonesia – pepper from Java, cloves from the Moluccas, as well as mace and nutmeg from the Banda Islands; India played no part in its early commercial strategy. The English Company's first trading base was established at Bantam in 1602, and the Company prospered in its first two decades as it struggled to gain a foothold. By taking the sea route to Asia, the Company was able to cut the prices of British imports of pepper, raw silk, cloves, indigo and mace by almost two-thirds compared with the overland route via Aleppo.[16] The Company's voyages between 1601 and 1612 generated returns of 155 per cent on invested capital of £517,784. Cloves sold from the Company's third voyage alone made profits of over 200 per cent. The first 'joint stock' then raised £420,436 to finance fleets for each of the four years between 1613 and 1616. But returns were much lower, though still substantial at 87 per cent. As time went on, a series of factors – including recession at home, mounting competition overseas and a growing glut of spices – meant that profits continued on a downward course. The second joint stock raised £1.6 million to finance annual voyages between 1617 and 1622, but could only offer 12 per cent back to investors, a rate of less than 1 per cent a year.[17]

What lives on from these times are tales of piracy and high adventure. Pirates have an ambiguous place in English folklore, part feared and part celebrated, and the first wave of East India traders simply continued an old English tradition: trade where necessary and plunder where possible. Though sometimes favoured by local people in the East Indies in their battles against the Dutch, the Company's motive was always the same: to secure exclusive control of local spice production. But the English Company progressively lost the 'spice race', outgunned and outclassed by the Dutch. Driven

from the Moluccas following the massacre of English traders at Ambon (Amboina) in 1623, the Company gave up the prized nutmeg island of Run as part of wider negotiations following the second Anglo-Dutch war in 1667. In return, New Amsterdam in the Americas was transferred to British rule, and quickly renamed New York. The English Company would cling on to its residual bases in the spice islands, but was finally expelled from Bantam by the Dutch in 1682.

WINNING THE CALICO WAR

Forced from the spice islands, the Company refocused its gaze on India. The Company's ships had initially visited the Gujarat and Coromandel coasts of India in search of cotton textiles, which could then be bartered for spices in the Indies. A first embassy led by William Hawkins arrived at the Mughal port of Surat in 1608. His pleas for trade relations failed to interest Mughal Emperor Jahangir, who was still heavily influenced by the Portuguese. Persistence and military muscle paid off, however, and a naval victory over the Portuguese in 1612 resulted in the Company's first Mughal permit (*firman*) to trade from Surat, and thereafter at Ahmedabad and Agra. On the opposite coast, trading started at Masulipatam, the principal port of Golconda, in 1614. These early forays were capped in 1618, when England's ambassador Sir Thomas Roe finally won an extensive trade treaty from Jahangir. Hoping to distinguish the English from the Portuguese and Dutch strategy of conquest and fortification, Roe counselled the Company to avoid military entanglements. 'If you will profit,' he urged, 'seek it at sea and in quiett trade.' By 1625, 220,000 pieces of cloth were being exported by the Company from Surat.

One of the most memorable artefacts from this time is the 'Girdler's Carpet'. Eight metres long in deep blues and reds, the carpet was commissioned by Robert Bell from the Company's 'factory' in Surat, which then contracted the renowned Mughal workshop in Lahore to carry out the weaving. Bell was one of the first investors in the East India Company in 1600, and rose steadily through its ranks. But along the way he gained a reputation for murky accounting, and in 1630 was discovered smuggling wine to India. Four years later, things came to a head when he was accused of failing to pay for the 'very faire carpitt' that he had designed for his livery company, the Girdler's – the medieval guild of belt-makers. Bell claimed to have made the payment. But the Company's agent in

Surat was by now dead. Many felt that Bell had cooked the books once more. By way of compensation, the Company confiscated 70 bags of Bell's pepper, and Bell withdrew from the Company under a cloud. His carpet remains on display in London's Girdler's Hall, and his mansion, Eagle House in Wimbledon, is now the home of the Al-Furqan Islamic Heritage Foundation. Bell was not the first – and would not be the last – Company executive to be fingered for ethical malpractice.

Maintaining a presence in Mughal India was a constant struggle. But, like the Dutch, the English Company succeeded largely by carving out a comfortable niche from the existing Portuguese empire, capturing its base at Hormuz on the Persian Gulf, for example, in 1622 and raiding Bombay in 1626. Permanent peace was signed with Portugal at Goa in 1635, giving the Company access to the Estado's ring of ports stretching all the way to Macao. It also paved the way for the establishment of the new base at Fort St George at Madras on the Coromandel coast in 1639. Bombay would follow in 1668, a wedding gift to Charles II from his Portuguese wife, Catherine of Braganza. The cash-strapped king promptly leased Bombay to the Company in return for a sizeable loan and an annual rent.

Before the benefits of this transfer could be realised, the Company almost ceased to exist, undermined by interlopers and civil war. For many in the seventeenth century, monopolies were regarded as the economic expression of royal despotism, powers to be opposed by the rising parliamentary forces. As early as 1604, a bill was introduced in Parliament to abolish all exclusive privileges over foreign trade. Supporting the bill, Sir Edwyn Sandys spoke out for the importance of commercial freedom: 'it is against the natural right and liberty of the subjects of England to restrain [merchandise] into the hands of some few'.[18] This was a spirit that would be echoed throughout the Company's career, with varying degrees of success. In 1604, the free trade bill failed. But the Stuart kings of England were always seeking additional sources of finance. As a result, the Crown was happy to back rival ventures, such as the short-lived Scottish East India Company of 1618 and the Courteen Association of 1636. Paradoxically, peace with Portugal became the excuse for William Courteen and a rival set of merchants to win a charter from the king to trade in the newly opened Portuguese zone. Courteen's venture would last for 15 years, disrupting the Company's monopoly presence. Yet, it would come together with the original Company in 1650 under the banner of the 'United Joint Stock' to found a permanent English factory in Bengal, at Hugli.

By then, however, the Company had been hard hit by the aftershocks of the British civil wars that raged from 1640 to 1647. The Anglo-Dutch struggles during Oliver Cromwell's protectorate in the 1650s also profoundly damaged Company interests. In addition, Cromwell refused to renew the Company's charter in 1653, allowing its monopoly to lapse. This produced a brief window of open commerce, boosting trade and reducing prices, yet crippling profits – a result almost exactly the same as the Dutch experience before 1602. On 14 January 1657, the situation had grown so bleak that the Company's directors voted to liquidate its affairs. This proved to be an effective ploy to force Cromwell's hand. By October, a new charter had been granted, and a permanent joint stock was established with capital to the tune of £740,000 – although only 50 per cent of this was actually subscribed at the time. It would take another half-century before the Company could match the invested capital of the second joint stock of 1617.

The Company could finally be called a modern corporation, and for the next three decades it experienced an economic boom. Between 1658 and 1688, the Company managed to complete 404 voyages between London and the East Indies, an average of 13 each season.[19] The return of King Charles II in 1660 secured its position, and from established bases at Surat and Madras, the new port of Bombay and the emerging trade with Bengal, Company imports surged. In 1664, it imported a quarter of a million pieces of cloth, almost half from the Coromandel coast, a third from Gujarat and less than a fifth from Bengal. By the end of the decade, cotton and silk textiles made up 56 per cent of Company imports, pushing pepper into second place, followed by raw silk, indigo, saltpetre, coffee and tea. Indian textiles hit an all-time peak of 1.76 million pieces in 1684, representing 83 per cent of the Company's total trade. This influx of cheap, easily washable clothing created a health and lifestyle revolution. By the end of the century, the value of the English Company's trade was fast catching up with the Dutch, with Bengal taking an ever-greater share. If the VOC was the commercial hare among the north European trading companies, the EIC was proving to be the tortoise.

The 1680s were the peak of the boom, when 200,000 pieces were exported from Bengal alone each year. This produced generous dividends and capital growth for the Company's investors. The Company's share price more than quadrupled in the two decades following the Restoration, growing from £60–£70 in 1664 to £245 in 1677 and £300 in 1680. Dividends were also substantial. For

most of the 1670s, the Company paid out a 20 per cent dividend. But in 1680, fortunes improved and a 50 per cent payout was made, to be repeated in 1682, 1689 and 1691. And in 1682, so strong were the Company's finances that each proprietor received matching shares as a bonus, taking the Company's capital stock to £740,000. In all, from 1657 to 1691, proprietors received 840 per cent in dividends on their original investment. And for India, there was a steady influx of bullion, stimulating growth in income, output and employment. Between 1681 and 1685 alone, the Company exported 240 tonnes of silver and 7 tonnes of gold to India.[20] Financially, these were perhaps the best days of the Company's life.

A BID FOR DOMINION

It was at this point that the Company's directors in London made a fundamental shift in corporate strategy, a turnaround engineered by one of the most influential executives in its history, Sir Josiah Child. Born in 1630, Child made his first fortune as a victualler (supplier of food) to the navy under Cromwell's protectorate. His career took off in the early 1670s, when he became a member of the exclusive victualling syndicate for the Royal Navy, along with another rising star, Thomas Papillon. This lucrative venture gave Child the resources to become a founding shareholder of the Royal African Company, which had been awarded a royal monopoly to conduct the slave trade, and was headquartered, like the East India Company, on Leadenhall Street. In 1671, Child became a shareholder in the EIC for the first time, and only two years later he held 2 per cent of the entire stock, becoming the largest shareholder in 1679. Shares brought power in the Company, and for 17 years, from April 1674 until his death in 1699, Child was on the Company's board. Throughout the 1680s, he was either governor (chairman) or deputy-governor.

'As a practical man of business, he had few equals', wrote Thomas Macaulay in his *History of England*.[21] Child had a firm grasp of the essentials of business administration, making his intentions absolutely clear at home and abroad. Poor performance was not accepted, as the Company's executives in Madras soon realised when they received a severe rebuke in September 1687. 'The great trouble we labour under', wrote Child, 'is that you cannot get out of your old formes, and your cavilling way of writing or perverting, or misconstruing, procrastinating, or neglecting our plain and direct orders to you as if you were not subordinate but a coordinate power

with us.'[22] Child was also a highly effective corporate advocate, producing a series of pamphlets under his own name and the pseudonym Philopatris, to persuade politicians of the Company's case. Early on in his career, he had also published *A New Discourse on Trade*, expounding the reasons for the Dutch success in trade, a model he wished to emulate.

Child's influence stretched to London's embryonic financial markets, where he had the reputation as 'the original of stock-jobbing'. Known today for his desert island story of Robinson Crusoe, Daniel Defoe was also a leading economic analyst of his age, and Defoe cast Josiah Child as a pivotal figure in his *Anatomy of Exchange Alley*. Published in 1719 as an investigation into the forces that would soon drive the South Sea Bubble, Defoe examined the rising markets of the 1680s and 1690s, and made it clear that 'every Man's Eye, when he came to Market, was upon the Brokers, who acted for Sir Josiah', enquiring 'does Sir Josiah Sell or Buy?' But it was not just Child's wealth that moved markets, but also his skill for manipulating the news from India. According to Defoe,

> there are those who tell us, letters had been order'd by private management to be written from the East Indies with an account of the loss of ships which have been arrived there, and the arrival of ships lost; of war with the Great Mogul, when they have been in perfect tranquillity, and of peace with the Great Mogul when he has come down against the factory of Bengal with 100,000 men, just as it was thought proper to call those rumours for raising and falling of the stock and when it was for this purpose to buy cheap or sell dear.[23]

Child's commercial vision was stark. Like many mercantilists, he saw wealth as being exclusively drawn from landed property. As a result, international trade was a zero-sum game with the goal of amassing as much of this wealth as possible for one's own nation.[24] Monopoly corporations such as the East India Company were therefore an essential part of England's commercial armoury. Child admired the tough-minded way in which the Dutch had achieved their supremacy and, echoing Coen, he fervently believed 'profit and power must go together'.[25] As he rose to prominence in the Company, Child put in place a radical plan to implement his vision. The first step was to make a new alliance with the Crown to guarantee the Company's privileges at home. Elected governor in 1681, Child quickly awarded Charles II 10,000 guineas to help

smooth the renewal of the Company's charter, a payment that became an annual gift for the next seven years. Next he broke with his former partner Thomas Papillon, who was proposing to open up the East India trade to a much wider pool of investors and merchants. Papillon was also a leading 'exclusionist' who wanted to stop Charles's Catholic brother James from becoming king. Driven from his position on the Company's board and hounded by the court, Papillon was forced into exile in 1685. Child rapidly became a favourite at court, marrying his daughter to the eldest son of the Tory aristocrat, the Duke of Beaufort, and transferring £10,000 of Company stock into James's name. With his position at court secure, Child clamped down mercilessly on the growing band of interlopers who sought to break the Company's monopoly.

Having secured his position in England, Child then implemented the second part of his strategy: commercial conquest abroad. Child wanted the Company to become a sovereign power in India, forcing the Mughal Empire to trade with it on terms of equality. The prize was Bengal, where the Company had increasingly important trading operations but lacked a fortified stronghold like Goa or Batavia. This left it exposed to the fiscal exactions of the provincial governor, who, for example, in 1680 introduced a 5 per cent duty on imported bullion and a 3.5 per cent duty on exports – in spite of the Company's technical duty-free export status. In January 1686, Child gave his blessing to an expeditionary force of ten ships and six companies of infantry sent by the Company to force concessions from the Mughals in Bengal. Writing to the President of Fort St George in Madras on 9 June 1686, Child underlined the imperative for the Company to transform itself from 'a parcel of mere trading merchants' into a 'formidable martial government in India'.[26] The same tone filled his visionary call in 12 December 1687 for the new President and Council in Madras to 'establish such a politie of Civil and Military power, and create and secure such a large revenue to maintain both at that place as may be the foundation of a large, well-grounded sure English dominion in India for all time to come'.[27]

Child had begun what has become known as the Anglo-Mughal war – although it would perhaps be better described as first Company–Mughal conflict. His strategy was, of course, complete madness. The Mughal Emperor Aurangzeb was a military zealot, intent on asserting his power throughout the subcontinent. In 1686, for example, he took Bijapur, and the following year Hyderabad. In Bengal, the local forces of the Mughal's deputy, or Nawab, were equally overwhelming. Three years of skirmishing through

the swamps of the delta followed, which 'only rendered our nation ridiculous', according to Job Charnock, the Company's chief in the region. Over in Gujarat, the Company raided Mughal shipping, provoking the capture of Surat and a full-blown siege of Bombay in 1689. Aurangzeb eventually restored the Company's trading rights, but at the cost of diplomatic humiliation and a fine of Rs150,000, plus damages. The conflict had 'rendered the English in all parts of India Odious and Contemptible'.[28] Only one piece of consolation could be drawn from the whole sorry affair. A new 'factory' was established among the villages of Kolikata, Govindapore and Sutanuti on the Hugli river in 1690, for which fortifications were begun in 1696 and *zamindari* rights purchased two years later. Calcutta had been born.

Yet, by then, Josiah Child's two-pronged strategy of corruption at home and aggression abroad had come crashing down. The Glorious Revolution of 1688–89 would not only replace Child's patron, James II, but would threaten the elimination of the Company itself.

A WHIRLWIND OF DISASTERS

On Guy Fawkes Day 1688, William of Orange, Stadtholder of the Netherlands, landed in England and ousted James II from the throne. Many forces were at work in this 'Glorious Revolution', most notably a convergence of a popular desire in England to be rid of a Catholic king with an urgent need in the Netherlands to remove James's pro-French threat. Yet commercial considerations were by no means secondary in the minds of the British elite as they constructed the unprecedented Bill of Rights that would bind the new joint monarchs, William and his English wife Mary, daughter of the deposed king. James's economic strategy, inspired by Child's aggressive mercantilism, had excluded whole swathes of the merchant class from the benefits of foreign trade. The result was a 'great grumbling in the City against a certain great East India merchant whose first name rhymes with Goliah'.[29]

Soon after the coronation in April 1689, the Convention Parliament began investigating the mounting complaints against the chartered corporations, most notably the African and Indian companies. Parliament quickly concluded in favour of establishing a new India company. This soon took shape at Dowgate in the City of London, with its base in the Skinners Hall. A fierce political battle began – 'the chief weapons of the New Company were libels; the chief weapons of the Old Company were bribes', wrote Macaulay.[30]

Initially aiming for reform, the Dowgate Adventurers pressed for the Old Company to double its capital to £1.5 million to let other investors have a share of its riches and to limit individual holdings to £5,000 to prevent the concentration of power that Child had enjoyed. Papillon returned from Utrecht to join the triumphant Whigs who were pressing for change. But Child refused to budge, and the Commons voted to dissolve the Old Company. Yet, before this could be put into effect, while Parliament was in recess, in October 1693, the King suddenly granted a new charter to the Company for 21 years.

Parliament was furious, and in January 1694 passed an uncompromising resolution stating that 'all subjects of England should have equal right to trade to the East-Indies'.[31] This marked a profound break with the chartering process. Previously, a charter was the personal privilege of the Crown; now it would have to be confirmed through an Act of Parliament. Trade with India had been freed, and budding merchants chose to move north of the border to establish a new Scottish East India Company with £300,000 of capital. Child showed his contempt for the will of Parliament in a private letter to the Company's executives in India. 'Be guided by my instructions', he wrote, 'and not by the nonsense of a few ignorant country gentlemen who have hardly wit enough to manage their own private affairs, and who know nothing at all about questions of trade.'

But this breach of the Company's monopoly was not the end of the matter. Many had been suspicious at the circumstances that led to the charter grant in October 1693, and Parliament opened corruption investigations in March 1695. Even by the lax standards of the day, politicians were genuinely shocked by what they found. A team of MPs pored through the Company's accounts and uncovered a complex web of bribes, all emanating from the Governor Sir Thomas Cooke, Child's son-in-law. In the six years since the Revolution, £107,013 had been paid out for 'the special Service of the Company', including a massive £80,468 in 1693 to win a new charter. A further £90,000 had been lent to Cooke to buy Company shares to ease the chartering process. A crooked saltpetre import deal was also discovered that would transfer another £12,000. Initially, Cooke refused to explain these transactions. But a short spell in the Tower of London and an Act of Indemnity – effectively, a plea bargain – freed his tongue. The first slice of £10,000 had been delivered to Josiah Child, who passed it on to the King as a resumption of the traditional gift he had made in the 1680s.

Other payments were made to a host of intermediaries to argue the Company's case at court. In front of a committee of both Houses of Parliament, Cooke was frank that 'the Inducements for giving this Money were, Fears of the Interlopers going out and Subscriptions for a new Company going on; by which they apprehended the Company would be ruined'.[32] With Josiah Child in the background, Cooke had orchestrated a whole series of intermediaries – a Mr Acton, Nathaniel Molineaux, Sir John Chardin, Paul Dockminique Esq and Captain John Jermaine – to press its case. The Attorney General received £545, and the Solicitor General just £218. Standing above all of these was Sir Basil Firebrace, who pocketed £40,000 in a series of contracts, which were designed to pay out only if the charter was won. Firebrace then commissioned others to sway the minds of key figures at court.

After interrogating Cooke, the MPs turned their attention on Firebrace. Like so many others broken by their own corruption, Firebrace sometimes stumbled in his answers, at one point pleading that he might postpone answering a particularly penetrating question to 'some other Time; being not well, not having slept Two or Three nights, and much indisposed as to his Health'.[33] Eventually, after persistent questioning, Parliament discovered that £5,500 had been received by Thomas Osborne, Duke of Leeds, and President of the King's Privy Council. The MPs expressed outrage at the 'dark practices in this affair', and feared that if someone so senior in government could take money for a commercial charter, he could also take money to betray the country to the French. But there was no law against taking money at court, and so a motion was prepared to impeach Leeds for abusing his office. A key witness fled the country, and before Parliament could start formal proceedings, the King commanded that the session be brought to a close, thereby ending the impeachment proceedings.

For John Pollexfen, a member of the parliamentary committee investigating the Company's affairs and a leading critic of its monopoly status, the conclusion was clear: 'companies have bodies, but it is said they have no souls; if no souls, no consciences'.[34] But Cooke, Child, Firebrace and Thomas Osborne all escaped punishment. As for the Company, its fate became ever more bleak. The post-Revolution stock market boom came to a shuddering halt, and the growing scandals cost the Company's shares 35 per cent during 1695 and a further 28 per cent in 1696. The situation was compounded by the onset of war with France, which disrupted the economy, hitting London's textile industry particularly hard.

The Company had long been the target of protests from protectionist interests, critical of its growing imports of Indian calicoes. 'When the East India ships come in,' they argued, 'half our weavers play.' Others contended that competition from India kept wages in the domestic wool and silk industries at starvation levels. The poor economic conditions of 1696 inflamed these passions. In March, a bill to prohibit the importation of 'all wrought silks, Bengalls, dyed printed or stained calicoes of India' was passed in the Commons. But in November, the Tory-dominated House of Lords declined to support the bill. Protesting against the 'Great Goliah', several hundred weavers marched from Spitalfields in the East End of London to Westminster to petition Parliament. The pressure was intensified the following January, when 5,000 weavers once again marched on Parliament. On their return journey, the weavers attacked East India House and broke open its door, forcing the intervention of the local militia. But this 'great insurrection of weavers' was by no means over. In March, rioters ransacked the house of the Company's Deputy-Governor Thomas Bohun in Spitalfields. Two days later, the weavers marched to Hackney and threatened Child's mansion in Wanstead. Soldiers fired at the crowds, killing one. Next month, the weavers attacked Leadenhall Street once more and 'very near seized the treasure of East India House'.[35]

The mood of financial crisis prompted the final denouement in the Company's long fall from grace. War had depleted the Crown's coffers, forcing it to turn to the City for cash. The Old Company offered the King a loan of £700,000 at 4 per cent interest. But the Dowgate Adventurers put forward a massive £2 million, though at a cost of 8 per cent interest. The King took the Dowgate offer, and in June 1698, the Commons passed an act awarding the monopoly of Asian trade to a new General Society. The Old Company's days appeared to be numbered. The next year Josiah Child was dead with £200,000 to his name – equivalent to nearly £22 million in 2010 prices[36] – and in 1700, a bill 'for the effectual employment of the poor and encouraging the Manufactures of England' was passed, banning the import of silk or cottons from Asia into England, except for domestic printing or re-export.

The promise of commercial liberty that so many had entertained would be dashed, however. Two giant loopholes allowed the Old Company to regroup and recover its ascendancy. First of all, it was given a three-year period to wind up its affairs, and second, it also had the right to invest in the New Company, which it took advantage of by buying up £315,000 or 15 per cent of the new

stock. The New Company was designed as an old-style regulated venture, enabling shareholders to trade under its umbrella up to the value of their holding. Shareholders were also able to form their own joint stock companies within the General Society, and so alongside the new 'English Company Trading to the East Indies', which accounted for the bulk of the shares, the Old Company continued to trade and its merchants in India stayed firmly in place. A valiant bunch of independent traders also managed to subscribe to £23,000 of stock, creating something of a competitive market for the first time since the 1650s. Adam Smith would later observe that this window of relatively open trade brought rising prices for producers in India, cutting sale prices to consumers in England.[37]

Neither the Old nor the New Companies, however, had any intrinsic interest in competition, and to avoid commercial civil war, a scheme of amalgamation was agreed on 27 April 1702, brokered by none other than Sir Basil Firebrace. Seven years later, the new United Company of Merchants Trading to the East Indies was finally launched. In return for an exclusive charter, a further £1.2 million was raised and promptly loaned to the Crown at zero interest. This took the Company's invested capital to £3.2 million, all of which was lent to the government at 5 per cent. The United Company was 'on its way to becoming the prosperous and sound commercial and financial corporation which was not only far and away the biggest and most complicated trading organisation, but was the centre of the financial market rising in London'.[38]

Yet, not everyone was happy. One of the independent shareholders, writing anonymously to an MP in 1708, expressed his disgust at the merger, lamenting that there was 'not a man left that dare bring in a muslin neck cloth or a pound of pepper but themselves'.[39] The great hopes of the Glorious Revolution had come to nothing, he wrote, noting that it was 'strange after all our struggles for liberty that this monster, monopoly, should lift up its horns and shake his chains to the terror of the honest trading subject'. It was a 'wretched bargain' and a subject 'so melancholy, it makes my head ake'.

ON THE IMMENSE OCEAN OF INDIAN COMMERCE[40]

Once again, the East India Company had escaped extinction at the eleventh hour. By the time of the merger in 1709, external events had also begun to move in its favour. In India, Child's great adversary the Emperor Aurangzeb died in 1707, leaving behind a depleted treasury and a series of ineffective successors. Ten years

later, on New Year's Eve 1716 the Emperor Farrukhsiyar made three imperial decrees (*firman*) granting the Company duty-free trading rights in the provinces of Bengal, Hyderabad – which contained the Coromandel coast – and Ahmedabad, which oversaw the ports of Gujarat. Imperial weakness, persistent negotiating and healthy bribes had succeeded where Child's frontal assault had failed. This *firman* provided the basis for a new era of corporate prosperity – as well as the seeds of perennial dispute with local rulers in India over its interpretation.

Perhaps more than any other of the Company's executives before or since, Josiah Child had demonstrated where an appetite for corporate power could lead. For contemporaries such as the diarist John Evelyn, he was the archetype of the 'suddenly monied', the new breed of merchant princes who had become both politically and economically dominant in the 1680s and 1690s. What makes his career so striking is the openness with which Child laid out his objective of commercial dominion and the consistency with which he sought to achieve it through a despotic alliance at home and aggression abroad. Like so many of his successors, he escaped unpunished, retiring to the calm of his walnut orchards at Wanstead. After Child, no-one either at headquarters or in the field would be as explicit in their intentions. But the desire would remain.

Turning its back on Child's adventurism, the Company's directors aimed to flourish by espousing high standards of corporate practice: 'righteousness is at the root of our prosperity', they urged their executives in India. Corruption still remained embedded in the Company's operations, but was kept to a manageable level. As for relations with India, the directors instructed its servants to 'take care that neither the broker, nor those under him, nor your own servants, use their authority to hurt and injure people'.[41] Its string of port cities flourished. In the case of Calcutta, Gulam Husain Salim, the Persian author of *Riyaz-us-Salatin*, argued that it was 'the liberty and protection afforded by the English', along with 'the lightness of duties levied', that explained its rise.[42]

'Trade, and trade only, was their business', and by the 1720s, the Company was outstripping its long-standing Dutch rival in terms of the Bengal textile trade.[43] Overall, it was now starting to match the VOC's share of the entire trade with Europe – a huge turnaround from the situation in the 1660s (see Table 3.1).

This commercial success was felt on the streets of London, where its main product line of Indian calicoes had become ubiquitous. Writing in January 1708, Daniel Defoe describes how calicoes 'crept

Table 3.1 Dutch and English East India Company exports from Asia 1668–1780 (in million florin)

	1668–70	*1698–1700*	*1738–40*	*1778–80*
English	4.3	13.8	23.0	69.3
Dutch	10.8	15.0	19.25	20.8

Source: Om Prakash, *European Commercial Enterprise in Pre-Colonial India*, New Delhi: Cambridge University Press, 2000, pp. 115, 121.

into our houses, our closets and bedchambers' to such an extent that 'everything that used to be made of wool or silk, relating to either the dress of women or the furniture of our houses, was supplied by the India trade'.[44] For the Company, the initial ban on 'Bengalls' introduced in 1700 proved to be a temporary constraint. In response, the Company refocused its efforts towards supplying the British calico printing industry with raw materials, and located re-export markets for India's textiles. As part of the fast-growing African slave trade, Indian cottons became a vital item of barter for human cargoes. This was globalisation Georgian-style – a development enthusiastically endorsed by Joseph Addison in the pages of the *Spectator*. Addison gloried in the way that London had become an 'emporium for the whole Earth'. Writing in 1711, he described how 'the single dress of a woman of quality is often a product of a hundred climates … the scarf is sent from the torrid zone … the brocade petticoat rises out of the mines of Peru and the diamond necklace out of the bowels of Indostan'.[45] One of the greatest of these jewels was the 'Pitt diamond' a 410 carat rock, acquired by Thomas Pitt, Governor of Madras, for 48,000 pagodas (£24,000) in 1701. Brought back to England, the diamond was split, with some stones sold to Russia's Peter the Great, and the central piece purchased by France's regent, Philippe, duke of Orleans in 1717 for £135,000, equivalent to £16 million in 2010 money. The extraordinary value of the diamond and the suspicious circumstances of its acquisition earned it a place in Alexander Pope's Moral Essays:

> 'Asleep and naked, as an Indian lay,
> An honest factor stole a gem away;
> He pledged it to a Knight; the Knight had wit,
> So kept the diamond and the rogue was bit'

A popular alternative to the final line was 'So robbed the robber and was rich as Pitt'.[46] It was this fortune that enabled Pitt to construct his country mansion at Swallowfield in Berkshire, and

provided the financial foundations for the political careers of his grandson and great-grandsons, William Pitt the Elder and Younger.

The relationship with India was not just about extracting diamonds. The rapid growth in demand for textiles provided a valuable economic stimulus, bringing a flood of bullion into the region. Competition for the output of India's weavers between the English and other European companies, and, more importantly, with the dominant Asian merchant class, also ensured that this was a 'seller's market', boosting returns for local producers. And that eternal indicator of the Company's fortunes, its share price, reflected this recovery. A steady upward curve can be plotted from the low point of £39 in June 1698, just as the New Company was receiving its new charter, rising to over £100 as arrangements for the great merger began in 1702. Given the momentous nature of the deal, it was no surprise that the share price passed £200 in December 1717 as news of the *firmans* reached the London market.

In the three years that followed the *firman*, imports of plain white calico almost trebled, spurring a new bout of agitation from the weavers. One melodramatic pamphleteer described, 'Europe like a body in a warm bath with its veins opened … and her bullion which is the life-blood of her trade flows to India to enrich the Great Mogul's subjects.'[47] In March 1720, Robert Walpole's government introduced a fully-fledged piece of protectionism, prohibiting 'the use and wear of all printed, painted, stained or dyed calicoes' much to the dismay of ladies of fashion. Only muslin was exempted. Twelve years after the prohibition, John Kay would invent the flying shuttle for weaving, paving the way for Britain's industrial textile industry, insulated from the competition of cheap Asian imports. Contending with trade wars over cotton was not the Company's only concern in 1720. Its stock got caught up in the South Sea Company speculation, soaring from £290 in May to £420 in June when the Bubble Act was passed, which banned any more joint stock corporations. When the South Sea Bubble duly burst, the Company's shares plummeted by two-thirds. But it survived and became the undisputed 'blue chip' mercantile stock on the London exchange. After the dismal 1690s, when dividends had been suspended, payments to shareholders were resumed at 10 per cent in 1716, falling to 9 per cent in 1723 in line with declining interest rates on the Company's bonds.

This apparently healthy equilibrium concealed major tensions, however. At home, the Company's monopoly remained a focus of dispute, and in 1730 petitions came in from London, Bristol

and Liverpool to open up the Asia trade. In words that Adam Smith would echo half a century later, the petitioners argued that 'whatever is gained by the monopolising company, in the high prices at which it was enabled to sell, or the low prices at which it was enabled to buy, was all lost by its dilatory, negligent and wasteful management'.[48] An intriguing proposal was put forward to replace the Company's joint stock with a regulated company, which would manage the common infrastructure of the India trade, in return for a commission on all imports and exports; independent traders would then operate freely under this umbrella. But the Company had deep pockets and cut the rate of interest on its loan to the government from 5 to 4 per cent, and presented the state with a free gift of £200,000 in cash. In return, the charter was extended to 1769, and the Company's monopoly would last until 1793.

As well as fending off challenges to its monopoly, the Company also had to deal with profound internal problems. Fraud in Asia and increasing competition from rival European operations, notably the French, were eating into the Company's returns. In February 1732, the Directors dismissed the entire Calcutta Council for corruption, and at the annual general meeting, the shareholders reluctantly accepted a deep cut to the dividend to 6.5 per cent. During the rest of the 1730s and 1740s, the stock fluctuated between £150 and £200, and dividends were a modest, but predictable 7 to 8 per cent. This was a far cry from the huge returns of the 1680s, and still lagged those of the VOC, which awarded dividends averaging 20 per cent in the 1730s. But steadiness was now the key. In all, the Company earned a profit of £30,000,000 more from its sale of Asian goods in the three decades 1713–43 than it paid out in bullion and other goods.[49]

In India, geopolitical turmoil had become a constant. The authority of the Mughals was visibly humbled following the sacking of Shahjahanabad (Delhi) in 1739 by the Persian Nadir Shah, who took the Peacock Throne back with him to Tehran. Political power fragmented, favouring the rise of autonomous regimes, notably in Bengal and Hyderabad. In the west, the Maratha confederacy asserted its military autonomy, raiding Bengal, for example, for the best part of the 1740s. And, although the Dutch no longer presented a threat, Britain's century-long conflict with France finally spilled over into India in the 1740s. In the mounting chaos of post-Aurangzeb India, the corporate needs of the Company and private interests of its executives would fuse together to produce the Bengal Revolution.

4
The Bengal Revolution

THE RISE AND FALL OF RAJAH NABAKRISHNA

Sovabazar in north Kolkata has a distinct and impressive atmosphere, the home to many of the city's oldest commercial families. As the city expanded rapidly in the eighteenth century under the Company's protection, a powerful class of Indian merchants came to the fore. Called banians by the British – after the *bania* caste – they performed the crucial role of intermediary. These local traders would arrange the purchase of key commodities such as textiles, opium and saltpetre for the Company, and make loans to provide much-needed cash flow. In addition, the banians also went into business with the Company's executives on an individual basis, enabling the English to profit from the opportunities for private trade that the hazardous posting to Bengal provided. In the words of William Bolts, one of the Company's most successful and controversial traders, 'a Banyan is a person by whom the English gentlemen in general transact all their business. He is interpreter, head book-keeper, head secretary, head broker, the supplier of cash and cash-keeper, and in general also secret-keeper.'[1] The importance of this relationship is depicted in Thomas Hickey's late eighteenth-century portrait of John Mowbray with his banian. Deep in discussion, Mowbray is seated, listening intently as the banian, swathed in cloth, reads from his account log, a map of their commercial hunting grounds in north India strategically placed on the wall behind them.

One of the most powerful of these merchants was Rajah Nabakrishna Deb, whose palace stills stands on Nabakrishna Street in Sovabazar. Two lions guard the gateway, their paws resting on red-painted cannonballs. Beyond lies an inner courtyard around which rises a two-storey building that contained Nabakrishna's offices, library, living quarters and shrine to the goddess Durga. During the lavish parties (*nautchs*) that he threw for the British, the women of the household would retire to their *zenana* on the upper floor to observe the proceedings through wooden grills. For almost half a century, Nabakrishna was one of the pillars of the Company's success in Bengal, a key ally in the revolution

that brought them control of India's richest province. When the new Nawab Siraj-ud-Daula confronted the Company in 1756, Nabakrishna took the Company's side, smuggling food into the besieged Calcutta before its fall. He then worked as Robert Clive's go-between in the negotiations that led up to Plassey, and, in its immediate aftermath, helped to loot the harem at Murshidabad of Rs80 million in gold, silver and jewels.

More than this, Clive and Nabakrishna apparently became close friends. Such was the depth of the friendship that when Clive was looking for a suitable location to celebrate Plassey in place of the destroyed church of St Anne's, Nabakrishna offered his own house as a substitute. Clive accepted and made an offering at the feet of Durga, Kolkata's local deity. To this day, 'the annual Durga Puja at 36 Nabakrishna Street is still known as Company Puja'.[2] In 1766, Clive awarded Nabakrishna the title of Maharajah, and a salary of Rs2,000 for his services to the Company. Returning home from the ceremony, Nabakrishna rode to his palace in Sovabazar on an elephant, scattering money in the streets. Ten years later, Warren Hastings went one step further and made him the perpetual *talukdar* of Sutanuti, one of the prime areas of Calcutta. So close was Nabakrishna to Clive that he would be accused by some of Clive's rivals of trumped-up charges of robbery and rape, charges of which he was quickly cleared.

But Nabakrishna's relationship with the British eventually soured. In 1780, Hastings needed to borrow Rs300,000 to cover a hole in his personal finances, and turned to Nabakrishna for help. Hastings wanted to transfer the money to the Company's account, and then use this to pay himself for the range of cultural activities he had funded out of his own pocket (including a mission to Tibet and the new madrasa in Calcutta). Nabakrishna insisted that the money should be treated as a gift rather than a loan, and Hastings accepted, recording it as a donation to the Company, from which he promptly started paying himself. Already murky, what made the deal extremely suspicious was that it coincided with Nabakrishna's request to be made one of the Company's key officials in the district of Burdwan in order to enable him to recover arrears from the local ruler. The appointment was made and the money changed hands. All this became entangled in the wider charges of malpractice and corruption that would later assail Hastings on his return to England. At his impeachment, the prosecution would argue that Nabakrishna's Rs300,000 was a bribe, and therefore contrary to Company rules.

Then, in 1792, in the middle of the trial, Nabakrishna changed tack and stated that it was a loan after all, for which he had never been repaid. Hastings was presented with a bill for £37,500 plus 12 per cent interest, which he refused to pay, prompting a second lawsuit that proceeded in parallel with the impeachment. Parliament's stamina for the marathon impeachment trial was fading fast, and in 1795, Hastings was acquitted of all charges, including of accepting a bribe from Nabakrishna. This should have put the Rajah in a good position in his parallel case; if the money was not a gift, then it must be a loan. But such are the vagaries of justice that it took a further nine years for the courts in London to conclude that Hastings had accepted a gift after all – and therefore had no obligation to repay the Rajah. By this time, Nabakrishna was no more, dying in 1797 and leaving Rs10 million (£1 million) – a fortune that would be worth over £80 million today.[3] The British mangled many Indian words in their time, but there is a special scorn in the anglicised version of Rajah Nabakrishna: Nobkissen.

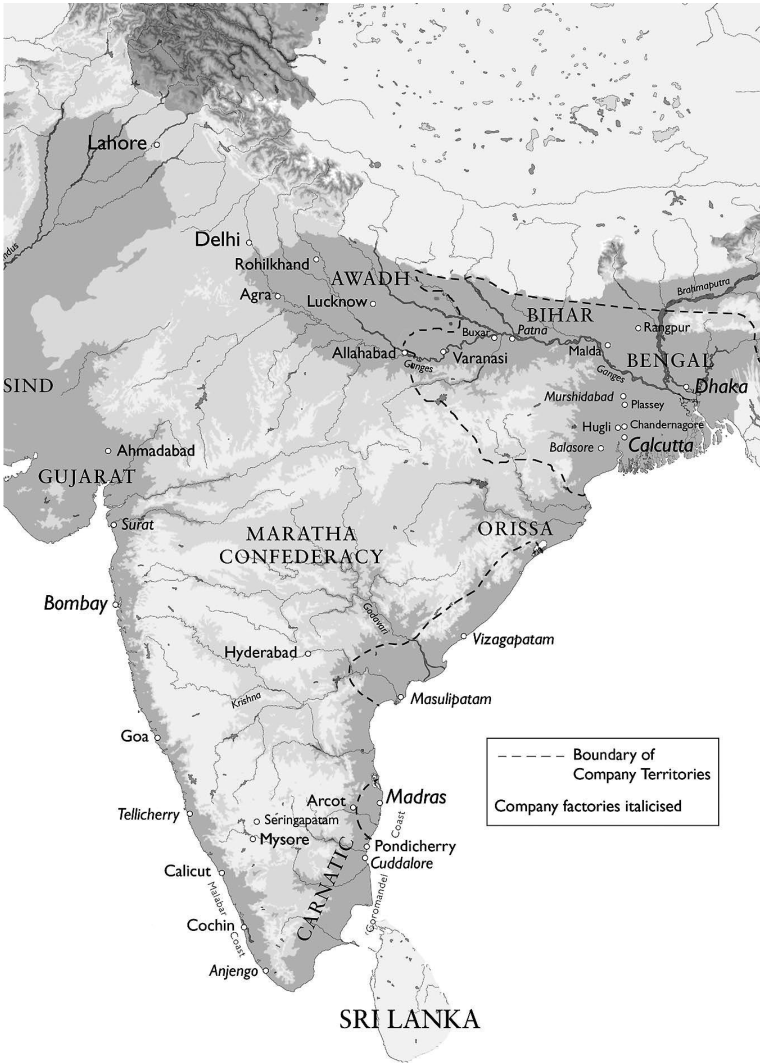
Nabakrishna's career symbolises the ending of the mutual mercantilism that the Company initially pursued in India. The French historian Fernand Braudel concluded that the Company's rise to prominence only came about with the 'help, collaboration, collusion, coexistence, symbiosis' of the local merchant elite.[4] The Company simply could not trade without their contacts and their capital. And when the Company needed ready cash to resolve the liquidity crisis in England caused by the South Sea Bubble in 1720, it borrowed the money in India. Yet, beneath this mingling of Indian and British trading cultures, a fundamental battle was under way between the moral economy of Bengal's regulated marketplace and the Company's monopoly capitalism. The Company had lost the first round to crack the Mughal Empire in the 1680s. But in the Bengal of the 1750s, it was pushing every opportunity to advance its interests against the regulatory power of the local nawab, the commercial supremacy of the Asian merchants and the rising threat of the French. What Child had failed to achieve in the 1680s, Robert Clive would accomplish through a mixture of sheer audacity, military force and exquisite fraud.

The violence of the Company's takeover of Bengal – and the use of the Company's own private army to carry out the transaction – has meant that the battle of Plassey and all that followed have generally been seen as a simple example of colonial conquest. This view is given strength by the Company's subsequent evolution into an agent of the British state, administering its Indian territories

in return for a secure profit for its shareholders. But the sheer strangeness of the Company's absorption of Bengal – and much of the rest of the subcontinent – should not blind us to the fact that this event is best understood as a business deal, as an extreme form of corporate takeover. Two words were used repeatedly by contemporaries to explain the peculiar transformation that took place. First, the Company had engineered a 'revolution' that not just replaced one nawab with another who was more amenable, but also changed the underlying dynamics of the Bengali state. Second, it had made a phenomenal 'acquisition' that placed the Company, its executives and shareholders on a totally new path to prosperity.[5] Adam Smith would later warn of the tendency of corporations to engage in a 'conspiracy against the public', using their economic muscle to erode the capacity of the state to regulate and tax for the common good. This was an age of revolutions, and alongside the better known American and French revolutions, the Company engineered its own revolution in Bengal. If evidence was needed of corporate conspiracy, this was it.

'THE RICHEST COUNTRY IN THE WORLD'[6]

For the first half of the eighteenth century, the Company's attention was focused on the prize that was Bengal. The Indian subcontinent was then the workshop of the world, accounting for almost a quarter of global manufacturing output in 1750, compared with just 1.9 per cent for Britain (Map 2).[7] Within the Mughal Empire, Bengal was the richest province (*suba*), described by Aurangzeb as 'the Paradise of Nations'. Proximity to good raw materials, a highly productive agricultural sector along with a sophisticated division of labour in cloth production gave Bengal an unbeatable combination of high quality and low prices. Such was the cost advantage that in the late eighteenth century Indian cottons could be sold at a profit in Britain, at prices 50 to 60 per cent lower than those fabricated domestically. Deeply embedded in the traditional village system, hand-woven cotton linked agriculture with industry, creating a diversity of income and providing goods that could be traded both locally and internationally. For millennia, Indian cotton cloths out-competed the rest of the world. Even in the first century A.D., the Roman historian Pliny was complaining that the extensive importing of cotton fabrics from India was draining Rome of gold. Similar complaints came from English weavers when Indian cottons once again began to enter Europe in bulk in the late seventeenth century.



Map 2 India in the late 1760s

Bengal's production was also distinguished by immense diversity, with over 150 different names for the textiles bought by the Company, covering muslins, calicoes and silk, along with mixed cotton and silk goods. Different production centres would specialise in particular styles; for example, Dhaka was renowned for the transparency, beauty and delicacy of its muslins. So fine was the

fabric that a pound of cotton could provide upwards of 250 miles of muslin thread. Quality and style varied from the finest *mull-mulls* and *allaballee* through to *shabnam* (morning dew) and *nayansukh* (pleasing to the eye). Essential for the feel of the muslin was the short-staple *phuti* cotton grown on the banks of the river Meghna, near Dhaka, described by the British Resident as 'the finest cotton in the world'.[8] One estimate from 1776 suggests that as many as 25,000 weavers were based in Dhaka producing some 180,000 pieces of cloth from thread spun by 80,000 women.[9] Along with its textiles, Indian names for cloth also entered the English language, not least bandana, calico and chintz, dungaree, gingham, seersucker and taffeta.

For the Company, the textile craze in Europe created immense wealth for its traders and shareholders. Although it had started trading textiles from the Gujurat and Coromandel coasts, Bengal steadily grew in importance. From just 12 per cent in 1668–70, Bengal's share of total Company imports climbed to 42 per cent in 1689–90, making it the largest single source of supply; by 1738–40, the proportion had climbed to 66 per cent.[10] But the Company was only one trader among many, and the trade of all the European companies put together probably represented only one-third of the Bengal's total exports, the bulk still being conducted by Asian merchants.[11] Not surprisingly, this immense source of demand created a powerful upward pressure on prices.

Access to this market was also tightly controlled, regulated by a Mughal trade policy that carefully delineated what could be traded and by whom on the basis of both economic functionality and social significance. The Mughals made clear distinctions between inland and international trade, with foreign companies being awarded the privilege of export in exchange for inflows of silver to enrich the treasury and lubricate the economy. Within Bengal's internal market, a range of prestige items, such as salt, betel and tobacco, were traded on the basis of social rather than market norms. 'European trading groups, people from the "hat-wearing nations" (*kulah poshan*) were admitted into these transactions of privilege and power as long as they did not disrupt the material hierarchy of exchange.'[12] This combination of strong demand and tight regulations meant that the terms of trade for the European traders drawn to Bengal were tough. Only bullion would do, and between 1708 and 1756 three-quarters of the Company's imports into Bengal were in the form of silver.

The foundations for the Company's operations in Mughal India were laid out in the succession of imperial decrees (*firman*), which

defined the commercial privileges granted by the emperor. From the 1650s, the Company had won the ability to export goods from Hugli, the main port of Bengal, duty-free in return for an annual payment of Rs3,000. But it was only in 1717 that the Company managed to win imperial backing for this position through the famous *firman* of Emperor Farrukhsiyar. As part of this decree, the Company's President at Calcutta was given unprecedented authority to issue passes (*dastaks*), which would then exempt shipments from paying duty. Like many multinationals operating today, the Company had been awarded a tax status that favoured it over local traders. But the *firman* did not specify which goods were to be covered, although the general understanding was that it applied solely to export goods.

Almost as soon as the 1717 *firman* was agreed, the Company began to push the boundaries of acceptable business. The Company's president began issuing *dastaks* to its executives enabling them to engage in private trade at duty-free rates. Worse, it also sold the passes on to Asian merchants, thereby gaining an income stream that legally belonged to the Nawab. For the Bengali authorities, the Company's practices posed a two-fold threat, undermining its revenue base and threatening the local economy. In his dispute with the Company, Siraj-ud-Daula would claim in 1756 that the Company had defrauded the Mughal exchequer of Rs15 million since 1717 through the abuse of its *dastaks*. The Nawab was also highly conscious of the destructive effect that the Company's ability to undercut local traders was having on the wider Bengal economy. In 1727, for example, the Nawab's officials stopped the Company fleet from Patna and found that it was illegally carrying huge stores of salt downriver to Calcutta. Protesting to the Company's president, the Nawab Alivardi Khan stated that if it did not put a stop to its 'encroachments', it would 'undersell all others, engross the whole trade of the province, and thereby deprive vast numbers of the natives of the means of a livelihood'.[13] Alivardi Khan repeatedly clamped down on *dastak* abuse, forcing the Company to make additional duty payments in 1727, 1731, 1732, 1736, 1740, 1744 and 1749.

The dominant position of Asian merchants in the Bengal economy also rankled with the Company. Like the Company, local merchants were keen to win sole control over vital commodities. The Armenian Khwaja Wajid, for example, prospered through his monopoly over the salt and saltpetre trades, and had a powerful position in the Patna opium trade. More than this, the Company resented its dependence

on local merchants for cash and connections. The Company simply did not have the skills or capacity to buy goods direct from the producers, and so had to commission local brokers to purchase textiles and other products on its behalf. In the case of textiles, the brokers would pay the weavers an advance (*dadni*), which was used to cover materials and living costs during the production of the cloth. This relationship generated considerable bitterness on the Company's part, its executives continually fearing that they were either being overcharged or supplied with sub-standard goods by the *dadni* merchants. The Company was also frustrated that these brokers were not wholly focused on its interests, but traded on their own account. Indeed, Asian trading houses, such as those headed by Jagat Seth and Amir Chand (Umichand), were often far richer and better connected than the Company. The relationship was further complicated by the huge extent of English indebtedness to local bankers. In the run-up to Plassey, almost all of Calcutta's English community had loans outstanding with Indian moneylenders.[14]

If this was not enough, competition from other European trading houses was threatening the Company's position. The English were just one of many foreign players in the Bengal market, and in the short stretch of the river Hugli north of Calcutta lay first Serampore (Denmark), Chandernagore (France), Chinsura (Netherlands) and the port of Hugli itself. Calcutta had become the leading port on the river in the 1720s, outstripping the long-established Dutch. In the 1730s, however, the French Compagnie Perpetuelle des Indes began to pose a serious threat. Under the leadership of Joseph François Dupleix as Governor of Chandernagore, the French took the commercial initiative from the English, most notably in the lucrative inland trade exploited by both companies' executives on their own account. Dupleix's commercial brilliance undermined both the corporate and private interests of his English rival, and it is with some accuracy that he was later able to claim, 'I made the English tremble for they saw their commerce dwindling and their merchants forced to declare themselves bankrupt.'[15] By the early 1750s, Company exports from Bengal were in decline, matched by a resurgence of Dutch trade from Chinsura. Back in London, the Company's shares also stumbled, commencing a slow slide from £197 in December 1752 to £133 in January 1757. Dividends also started to slip, falling from 8.6 per cent in 1752 to 5.8 per cent in 1756, a pathetic payout that was repeated in the two following years.

Revolutions often occur when a strong run of improving conditions comes suddenly to a halt. The shattering of expectations that this

brings drives those affected to seek radical solutions. Bengal was no different in the early 1750s, where the Company was desperate to find a solution to its worsening commercial position. In 1751, the Company's *dadni* merchants refused to comply with new terms and conditions, and the Company suffered a severe procurement shortfall the following year. In June 1753, the situation had become a crisis, and the Company abolished the entire *dadni* system, introducing paid agents (*gomastas*) who would purchase goods directly from the production outlets (*aurungs*). By cutting out the middleman, the new approach also gave the Company's executives a chance of relaunching their own trading businesses; the road to Plassey was paved with the commercial adventurism of private trade. Relations with the Nawab continued to sour, and in August 1752 Robert Orme, one of the Company's leading merchants in Calcutta, wrote in frustration to a friend in Madras, ''twould be a good deed to swing the old Dog [Alivardi Khan]. I don't speak at random when I say that the Company must think seriously of it or it will not be worth their while to trade in Bengal.'[16] The friend was another Robert, Robert Clive.

THE SPIRIT OF WAR AND CONQUEST[17]

Frustration was one thing, the opportunity to realise these private thoughts quite another. What created the conditions for revolution to finally take place was the steady implosion of Mughal authority. Imperial over-stretch under Aurangzeb had left the Mughals vulnerable to repeated assaults from Afghan, Persian and Maratha invasions. Perpetual court intrigue and waning military might also began to undermine its highly effective system of imperial governance. At its heart had been strict control over provincial governors ensuring that appointments were made from the centre. In addition, the Mughals separated provincial powers between a *nazim*, who administered political and judicial matters, and a *diwan*, who managed tax and financial affairs. In Bengal, this elegant system began to break down in 1717 when both offices were merged under Murshid Quli, who promptly moved the capital from Dhaka to the self-styled Murshidabad. When he died in 1727, he was succeeded by his son-in-law, Shujauddin, who ruled until 1739. Then in a bloody coup that set the precedent for subsequent events, Shujauddin's son was deposed by his pipe-bearer (*hookahburdar*), Alivardi Khan. Bengal's economy had considerable strengths. But even these began to be shaken by the persistent Maratha raids

throughout the 1740s, and the Nawab's growing use of arbitrary measures to raise revenues. And although Alivardi ruled for over 15 years, the regime he passed on to his grandson, Siraj-ud-Daula, was highly personalised and increasingly fragile. A weak ruler would leave Bengal exposed to the side-effects of the global war now being pursued by France and Britain.

Since the merger of Anglo-Dutch interests at the Glorious Revolution in 1688, France rather than the Netherlands had been viewed as Britain's primary imperial competitor. It would take a hundred years of on-and-off warfare to decide the outcome at the Battle of Waterloo in 1815. Initially, the countries' two East India companies were able to stand aloof from this geopolitical struggle, with both sides agreeing a neutrality pact during the War of the Spanish Succession (1701–14). But in the War of the Austrian Succession (1740–8), the British state propelled the two companies into open hostilities. After his term of office at Chandernagore, Dupleix had become Governor of Pondicherry. In 1744, when news of war reached India, Dupleix once again offered a neutrality pact to his counterpart in the English Company at Madras. The Company played for time, but offshore the Royal Navy raided the Compagnie's shipping. Hostilities had begun.

In the ensuing battles, not only did Madras fall to the French, but the French also defeated the Nawab of the Carnatic who had understandably forbidden the two Companies from fighting on his territory. Although Madras was returned to the Company at the Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle that ended the Austrian War, the conflict continued, with both firms now backing rival princes for control of the Carnatic. It is in these conflicts in South India that Robert Clive first showed his military prowess, and the Company saw a new source of income emerging from 'nabob-making' alongside commerce. Like other Company executives, Clive arrived in India as a young writer, landing in Madras aged 19 in June 1744. From a modest gentry background, Clive was keen to restore his family's social status, and used the proceeds of his first Indian fortune to pay off the mortgage for his birthplace, Styche Hall in Shropshire.

As a boy, he had been known for being 'out of measure addicted' to fighting, and it was only when war erupted in India that he showed any promise for the Company. Untrained as a soldier, Clive had an uncanny ability to pull off audacious guerrilla actions, capturing Arcot and holding it in the teeth of an overwhelming French force. The following year, he forced Trichinopoly to surrender, and in the eventual peace treaty, the Company acquired San Thome and

Poonamallee, boosting the territorial revenues of Madras. Clive returned to England in October 1753 as a popular hero, receiving a gold-lined sword studded with diamonds from the Company's grateful directors.

Dislodged from Parliament in a disputed election contest, Clive returned to India in April 1755 as Governor of Fort St David at Cuddalore. His mission was to open a new front against the French on the west coast, attacking their interests in Hyderabad. By the time he reached Bombay, however, peace had been agreed, and Clive was en route to Madras when disturbing news arrived that the Company had been expelled from Bengal.

THE ROAD TO PLASSEY

Alivardi Khan's grandson, Siraj-ud-Daula, came to power in April 1756 aged 21. Generally portrayed by his opponents as a vicious and decadent individual, Siraj-ud-Daula's stance towards the British was perfectly consistent with the core principles of his grandfather's reign. Alivardi Khan had tried to clamp down on the Company's abuse of the *dastak*, and was highly suspicious of the growing military dimension of the Company's settlement in Calcutta. In particular, he objected to the defensive ditch that had been constructed to protect the city against the Maratha raids of the 1740s. 'You are merchants,' he told the Company, 'what need have you of a fortress?'[18] Both of these factors were also prime drivers of Siraj-ud-Daula's decision to teach the Company a lesson. He was particularly concerned by the Company's decision to strengthen Fort William in Calcutta, motivated in part by the threat of a coming global war against the French. The new Nawab had the added grievance of the Company's decision to give refuge to one of his leading opponents. Even one of the Company's own executives, Richard Becher, recognised that it had given the Nawab 'sufficient cause to be angry with the English'.[19]

For its part, under the wayward leadership of Calcutta's President Roger Drake, the Company wholly underestimated the determination of the new Nawab to curb its misdemeanours. As in previous disputes between nawab and Company, negotiation was the first option for resolving the conflict. Siraj-ud-Daula sent his ambassador Narayan Singh to parley with the Company in Calcutta. But Singh was humiliated and unceremoniously expelled. Reporting back in Murshidabad, Singh was outraged, saying 'what honour is left for us men when a few traders, who have not yet learnt to wash their

bottoms, reply to ruler's orders by throwing out his messenger?'[20] Yet still Siraj-ud-Daula pressed for a negotiated solution, declaring that 'if the English behave themselves like merchants they may rest assured of my favour, protection and assistance'.[21] The problem of course was that the Company no longer wanted to be just another merchant among many. It wanted dominion and refused to accept the Nawab's terms – the demolition of fortifications, the ban on the sale of *dastaks* to Asian traders and an end to harbouring the Nawab's enemies.

When all else failed, the Nawab sent his forces to capture Calcutta. The Company might have been commercially significant, but a combination of cowardice and lack of preparations meant that Fort William was quickly overwhelmed in June 1756. In an incident that became part of British imperial myth, that night anything up to a hundred Company prisoners died of asphyxiation in the 'black hole', a tiny cell in the grounds of Fort William. The President of the Bengal Presidency, Roger Drake, had already fled downstream, and anchored off Fulta near the mouth of the Hugli. Just as in 1689, the Company was on the verge of total expulsion from Bengal, its most profitable subsidiary. Articles in the London press estimated that the Company lost £2,250,000 on the fall of Calcutta, more than half its nominal share capital. Siraj-ud-Daula underscored his position of supremacy by renaming Calcutta as Alinagar and demanding repayment from the Company of evaded customs duty for the past 15 years. In local markets, traders quickly drew their own conclusion from the Company's humiliation, and calico prices rose 50 per cent, with the price of European goods falling in proportion. 'This alarmed the Company's governors so much', commented one observer, 'that they took immediate measures for repossessing the settlements.'[22]

Unknown to Siraj-ud-Daula, the Company was rapidly constructing a counter-offensive deploying the forces sent with Clive for the Hyderabad expedition along with Royal Navy ships under the command of Admiral Watson. On 11 October 1756, Clive wrote back to the Company's Secret Committee in London that 'I flatter myself that this expedition will not end with the retaking of Calcutta only – and that the Company's estate in these parts will be settled in a better and more lasting condition than ever.'[23] In the instructions it gave to Clive two days later, the Madras Council highlighted the importance of winning back Calcutta (with reparations), but added that the mission should also 'effect a junction with any powers in Bengal that might be dissatisfied with the violence of the Nawab's

government or that have pretensions to the nawabship'.[24] The Company was putting its experience in the Carnatic to good use.

Clive's expedition was small in number, but highly focused, ransacking Hugli in January 1757 and retaking Calcutta the following month. By the Treaty of Alinagar, the Company was empowered to mint its own coin and extend the use of the *dastak* to its private trade. Clive pushed on. Avoiding French overtures for a neutrality pact in Bengal and taking advantage of the incursion of Afghan marauders in the west of the province, Clive's forces bombarded and captured Chandernagore in March. The commercial significance of this victory cannot be underestimated. When news of the fall of Chandernagore reached London months later, the Company's share price rose by 12 per cent.[25] The first of the obstacles to the Company's domination of the Bengal economy had now fallen.

Intrigue would soon finish off both the Nawab and the Asian merchants. The story of the conspiracy that led to Plassey is obscured by claims and counter-claims about who was ultimately responsible. For one expert, it was the British who 'engineered and encouraged the coup'.[26] Clive in his letter to the Company's directors following the victory at Plassey reported that it was disaffected Bengalis who had 'made overtures to us'.[27] Whatever the precise allocation of responsibility, it is clear that there was a powerful convergence of interests between the English Company and sections of the Bengal court. If blame is to be attached, the Company was obviously guilty of fomenting illegal insurrection, while Mir Jafar, Jagat Seth, Amir Chand and the other conspirators were equally at fault for high treason.

All three of the major plotters on the Bengali side were significant figures in their own right. Mir Jafar was a leading soldier and Siraj-ud-Daula's paymaster-general (*bakshi*), but had been removed from office in the wake of Chandernagore. The Jagat Seths were unrivalled in northern India for their financial power. Known as 'banker of the world' (*jagat seth*), this *marwari* family had built up formidable economic resources on the back of its control of the imperial mint and extensive moneylending. They wielded this financial clout at the Bengali court and were judged to be 'the chief cause of revolutions in Bengal' by a French commentator at the time.[28]

Originally from Agra, Amir Chand was another of Bengal's leading merchant princes, controlling much of the trade in opium and saltpetre. He was also well known to the Company, working as one of its *dadni* merchants from the early 1730s. Relations had

not always been harmonious between the two, and in 1735, the Company terminated its contract with him on account of fraud. Four years later, however, he was reinstated and later managed a full third of the Company's annual investment in Bengal.

The novelty of the Plassey coup did not lie in the raw fact of intrigue and treachery in the Bengal capital of Murshidabad. What was new was the willingness of the conspirators against Siraj-ud-Daula to ally themselves with what were in effect foreign mercenaries. Like the weak and greedy nobles operating in post-Roman Britain, leading aristocrats and merchants at the Bengal court believed that they could control the foreign barbarians to their own ends. They proved to be catastrophically mistaken. Bengal was certainly rich, but its governing and merchant elite had little depth, basing their primacy on personal contacts and loyalties. Set against this was a robust impersonal institution with a highly focused set of priorities. The Company's corporate structure gave it 'a collective strength and unity of purpose [that was] not available' either to Asian merchants or post-Mughal nawabs.[29] This single-mindedness would soon be on display in Bengal.

During the intense negotiations of the deal that would overthrow Siraj-ud-Daula, Amir Chand once again overstepped the mark, in the process becoming the original 'Mr Five Percent'. Threatening to expose the plotters, Amir Chand demanded a full one-twentieth of the Bengal treasury for his continued support. One hundred and fifty years later, in 1914, another more successful corporate intermediary, Calouste Gulbenkian, earned the title 'Mr Five Percent' for the share he received of the Turkish Petroleum Company for arranging the deal between an Anglo-Persian syndicate, Shell and Deutsche Bank. Back in 1757, both the other Bengali conspirators and the Company were outraged by Amir Chand's audacity. In a sleight of hand that would become legendary, Clive drew up two treaties with Mir Jafar. In a fake treaty inscribed on red paper, Clive agreed to Amir Chand's demand, forging the signature of Admiral Watson, the leader of the expedition. In the real treaty written on white paper, however, no mention was made of this transfer. When Amir Chand learned of the trick in the aftermath of Plassey, he fainted with shock. He then tried to sue both Clive and the Company in the English courts for breach of contract. Mr Five Per Cent died a broken man, outwitted by someone more venal than himself.

The conspiracy that culminated at Plassey was a close-run thing and almost ended in disaster. Siraj-ud-Daula actually discovered the plot. But in a bout of indecision that proved his undoing, the Nawab

decided not to crush the conspiracy and sought reconciliation instead. In addition, his attention was divided, fearing both incursions of Afghan troops in western Bihar and the aggressive Company to the south. On 23 June 1757, the Nawab's larger but poorly organised and internally divided forces met the Company's much smaller yet better-disciplined troops near a grove of mango trees at Plassey. Perhaps as many as 50,000 Bengalis faced the Company's forces of 3,000 infantry, of which only a third were British. Luck, pluck and treachery all came together to bring about the Nawab's defeat, which was swiftly followed by his assassination. The Company installed Mir Jafar as its puppet and proceeded to implement the terms of its treaty.

The payback began immediately. French factories were eliminated from Bengal, substantial damages were paid as compensation to the Company, as well as to the English, Indian and Armenian inhabitants of Calcutta, and the Company received grants of lands surrounding the city, known as the 24 *parganas*. In an extraordinary deal, Clive had won an immediate £2.5 million for the Company to be followed by enhanced revenues into the future. Writing in triumph to the Company's directors on 26 July 1757, Clive concluded that 'this great revolution, so happily brought about, seems complete in every respect'.[30]

REAPING THE REWARDS OF REVOLUTION

Almost immediately after the Plassey coup, the techniques that Clive had deployed were subject to substantial scrutiny, and have been the focus of controversy ever since. Many criticised Clive for stooping to so-called 'Oriental' practices of corruption and deceit. Surveying Clive's career many years later, Thomas Babington Macaulay concluded that he had become an 'Indian intriguer', and his trickery of Amir Chand was 'not merely a crime, but a blunder'. Clive's most recent English biographer, Robert Harvey, takes a more Machiavellian approach and argues that Clive 'deserves enormous credit for his skill in deceit'.[31] There can be little real sympathy for Amir Chand, outwitted by someone more underhand than himself. But Clive's great deception forms part of the original lie that underpinned British rule in India. The 'black hole' incident would later be blown up as a crime that justified the Company's fullest retribution. But the Company would remain wide open to the charge of hypocrisy when it later extolled its 'plain dealing' (in Clive's own words) as providing the foundations for its rule.[32]

More serious are the charges of corruption levelled at Clive. Along with other leaders of the expeditionary force, Clive profited enormously from the Plassey Revolution, gaining Rs200,000 as a member of the Bengal Select Committee, a further Rs200,000 as commander-in-chief, and another Rs1,600,000 in the form of private donations from the Bengal nobility, in all amounting to £234,000 – some £22 million in 2002 values. Aged 33, Clive had suddenly become one of the richest men in England. But it was not just money that Clive received. Intriguingly, this English executive of a trading corporation and lieutenant-colonel in the British Army had also become an *omrah* or Mughal noble, a 'flower of the Empire'. Defending himself in Parliament many years later, Clive declared himself innocent of all charges: 'Mr Chairman, at this moment, I stand astounded at my own moderation.' Unseemly as these payments may well have been, Clive was breaking no law in accepting them. He was merely setting 'an evil example' to others, according to Macaulay. Furthermore, his rewards are in many ways not that different from the success bonuses awarded to the chief executives of 1990s corporations for pulling off high-stakes acquisitions. Vodafone's Christopher Gent, for example, won an extra £10 million in 2000 for securing the capture of Germany's Mannesmann, a reward that one shareholder described at the time as behaviour akin to 'the robber barons of old'.[33]

What Clive had started, others would copy. In the eight years that followed Plassey, the Company placed four nawabs on the throne of Bengal. Each 'revolution' was accompanied by the transfer of more land to the Company to reschedule the Nawab's now-hefty debts, along with lavish presents for leading Company executives, totalling £2.2 million, along with another £3.8 million in reparations. In 1760, Mir Jafar was toppled by the Company in favour of his son-in-law Mir Kasim, who in turn was overthrown in 1763 when he tried to stop the cancer of the Company's private trade. Mir Kasim's solution was bold – abolishing all internal customs duties, thereby negating the value of the Company's duty-free *dastaks*. This reform could not be allowed to stand, and so the Company went to war once more.

Such was the hatred of the Company that a group of English prisoners held in Patna were murdered by Mir Kasim's troops in 1763, a deliberate act of vengeance far more brutal than the 'black hole' incident six years earlier. The once pre-eminent Jagath Seths were also beheaded for their complicity with the British. In addition, armed bands of holy men (*sannyasi*) contributed to the turmoil,

with one group raiding Dhaka and looting the Company's factory at Baiganbari. Mir Kasim joined forces with the Nawab of Awadh and the Mughal Emperor Shah Alam II to challenge the Company for control of Bengal. In this second 'Company–Mughal War', the original outcome was reversed. At the battle of Buxar in October 1764, the Company's forces triumphed in a victory that was perhaps more decisive even than Plassey. Mir Jafar was returned to the throne for a pitiful last few months before his son Najim-ud-Daula took over in early 1765. Not for nothing has this period been described as 'one of the worst chapters in English history'.[34]

Beyond the sordid details of the repeated coups that the Company inflicted on Bengal lies the fundamental motivation for the deed – the establishment of market dominion for the benefit of the Company and its executives. As Macaulay acknowledges, Clive 'considered himself as the general, not of the Crown, but of the Company'.[35] And what had the Company gained by this revolution? The regulatory authority of the Nawab was broken, enabling the Company to achieve its long-desired monopoly over the export trade, expand into the internal market and appropriate the public revenues of Bengal for its own benefit. One estimate suggests that in the decade after Plassey, Bengal lost two-thirds of its revenues to this commercial plunder.[36] As Luke Scrafton – Clive's right-hand man – would later comment, Plassey allowed the Company 'to carry on the whole trade of India (China excepted) for three years, without sending out one ounce of bullion'.[37] The reversal of global economic eminence had begun.

Within Bengal, the Nawab's ability to enforce rules against the abuse of *dastaks* was severely weakened. Exerting his new-found power, Clive insisted that the Company's executives (himself included) should have free rein to exploit the internal market. Bengali fears that this would mean that the English would 'engross' the market were soon proved right. By 1762, the Nawab Mir Kasim was protesting to the Company in Calcutta that its *gomastas* 'forcibly take away the goods and commodities of the *ryots*, merchants etc for a fourth part of their value; and by ways of violence and oppression they oblige the *ryots* to give five rupees for goods which are worth but one'.[38]

With the regulatory capacity of the Bengal state eliminated, the Company was able to remove the competitive threats posed by both the other European trading companies as well as local Asian merchants. The French challenge had already been eliminated with the capture of Chandernagore in the run-up to Plassey. Although the

French returned to the port (and stayed until 1947), the Compagnie Perpetuelle was a shadow of its former self, and would be liquidated in 1769. As for the VOC, only a few months after Plassey, Company traders were using their new position to undermine their Dutch rivals. Company agents became infamous for invading the textile districts, and ripping away pieces of cloth being woven for the VOC. Faced with commercial annihilation, the Dutch staged a desperate rearguard action. In June 1759, the VOC sent a fleet from Batavia to Bengal. But the expedition was bungled, and the Dutch were forced to pledge never to bring troops to Bengal again. The Dutch monopoly of the Bengal opium trade – exercised through a private company, the Opium Society – was also overturned and replaced by the Patna Group of English traders, who quickly became infamous for their underhand practices and the wealth they generated. For example, Company executives were known to 'order a peasant to plough up a rich field of poppies, and sow it with rice' to reduce supply and thus boost the opium price.[39]

As for the Asian merchants, Amir Chand's fate was merely an extreme example of what was to strike the Asian merchant class. Key areas of the inland economy that had once been controlled by Asians were now formally transformed into a Company monopoly. In 1758, for example, Mir Jafar gave the Company the rights to the valuable saltpetre sector, a business that Amir Chand had himself once dominated. In addition, the Company pushed forward with the system of salaried *gomastas*, eliminating the need for Asian business partners.

AN UNREQUITED TRADE

After Buxar, all of Bengal was at the Company's mercy. Its competitors had been dealt with, and the Nawab was no longer any threat. But there was still one final acquisition that would complete the revolution: the absorption of Bengal's treasury into the Company's accounts. The transfer of 24 *parganas* following Plassey had added £58,000 in taxes to the Company's revenues. Soon Clive was being approached by the Mughal Emperor, requesting that the Company assume the office of tax management (*diwani)* in order that Bengal's regular tribute to Delhi could be resumed. Writing to the Prime Minister, William Pitt, in January 1759, Clive explained that he had declined 'for the present'. Clive then sailed home with a £300,000 fortune – equivalent to nearly £36 million in 2010 – and a lifetime award (*jagir*) from Mir Jafar worth some £30,000.[40]

The installation of Mir Kasim in 1760 brought the districts of Midnapore, Burdwan and Chittagong under Company control, yielding another £650,000. When Clive returned to India for the third and final time in May 1765, he threw off his initial caution and forced the enfeebled Shah Alam II to formalise the Company's control. On 12 August 1765, the Emperor granted the Company the *diwani* rights for Bengal, Bihar and Orissa, in return for an annual tribute of Rs2.6 million, equivalent to £325,000. When all the costs of the Nawab's administration had been deducted, Clive calculated that from Bengal's annual tax revenues of Rs25 million, there would still be 'a clear gain to the Company' of Rs12 million or £1,650,900.[41] In twenty-first-century terms, this amounted to an annual surplus of over £175 million, a profit margin of some 49 per cent.

For the cost-conscious directors back in Leadenhall Street, who had obsessively managed the export of scarce bullion to Asia for over 150 years, Clive painted a wondrous picture of bounty. The acquisition of *diwani* rights would now 'defray all the expenses of the investment, furnish the whole of the China treasure, answer the demands of all your other settlements in India, and leave a comfortable balance in your treasury besides'.[42] Clive cleverly maintained the fiction of Mughal authority by ensuring that taxes continued to be collected by local officials, 'a perfect example of income without investment', according to Professor Sirajul Islam of Bangladesh's Asiatic Society.[43] In the next six years, the Company would collect over £20 million, generating a surplus of £4 million, less than initially expected. But this was still a substantial haul at a time when the Company's total exports from Asia before the *diwani* amounted to just £1 million each year.

The corporate state had arrived. Contrary to later rationalisations by imperial historians, Clive had not acquired the *diwani* to promote the interests of the British Empire. His motivation was far more straightforward. 'Though never inattentive to his own interests', wrote James Mill in his *History of British India* in 1817, Clive was 'actuated by a sincere desire to promote the prosperity of the Company'.[44] The directors could not believe their good fortune and instructed its officials in Bengal to split the surplus between the purchase of Bengal textiles for shipment back to England, sending the remainder to Canton to buy tea. This arrangement would progressively beggar Bengal in what was known somewhat poetically as the 'unrequited trade'. More prosaically, by the end

of the century, 85–90 per cent of Bengal's external trade was in the Company's hands.[45]

THE WEAVERS' THUMBS

It was the wealth of Bengal's textile industry that had first lured the Company to Bengal, and it would be Bengal's weavers who felt the full force of the Company's new-found market power. Never rich, Bengal's weavers still had a better standard of living than their counterparts in contemporary England, largely owing to their ability to determine their terms and conditions. According to Prasannan Parthasarathi, there is compelling evidence that India's weavers had 'higher earnings than their British counterparts and lived lives of greater financial security'.[46] Economic tradition in India supported the position of the weaver against the merchant. At a time when the British state was intervening on the side of the employer – for example, to set maximum levels for wages – Indian weavers were able to act as a collective body, improving their ability to negotiate favourable prices. This bargaining power combined with strong European demand for cloth in the first half of the eighteenth century created a seller's market, enabling Indian weavers to enjoy a 'golden age' of low costs and high prices.

All this ended following Plassey. From a situation of relative economic independence, Bengal's weavers were forced into a position of near slavery, unable to sell to others and obliged to accept whatever the Company's agents (*gomastas*) would offer for their cloth. 'The Company went to market as Sovereigns and Tyrants', argued a revealing briefing written for Philip Francis in the 1770s. 'Instead of seeking a preference by paying better,' it added, 'they forced the manufacturers to Work for them and to work at an under price, at the same time that they prohibited all private merchants from dealing in the Assortments required for their Investment.' The outcome was inevitable: 'thus a general Monopoly was at once rigorously established'.[47]

The Company employed all kinds of subterfuge to squeeze prices ever lower. One practice that was particularly resented was the classification of perfectly good quality cloth as sub-standard (ferreted). These pieces would then be sold on to the open market at a price substantially higher than that given to the weaver, in the process making a tidy profit for the Company's *gomasta* and Resident. As prices fell, weavers became unable to cover the costs of production, leaving themselves increasingly unable to earn enough

to pay back the advances they had received from the Company. Further poverty and indebtedness followed. For Bangladeshi scholar Hameeda Hossain, it was 'the corporate buyer, who had provided the weaver with his working capital and access to the market [that] became the root cause of his pauperisation and alienation from his occupation'.[48]

Some weavers resisted this abuse of power. For example, in 1767, a group from Khirpal sent a delegation to Calcutta with a petition requesting an increase in the purchase price of cloth. Remarkably, the Company authorities agreed. But the local Company Resident not only ignored the order, but threatened to have the troublesome weavers arrested if they pursued their case. Yet, this was a rare example of resistance, and by the early 1770s, the Company was earning impressive returns from its policy of oppressive exchange. One estimate suggests that the Company's *gomastas* were able to pay 'in all places at least 15 per cent and in some even 40 per cent less' than the weaver would receive in the public bazaar.[49]

These price cuts were achieved at the cost of a brutality that became infamous at the time. According to William Bolts's celebrated account, 'various and innumerable' were 'the methods of oppressing the poor weavers, such as by fines, imprisonments, floggings, forcing bonds on them etc'.[50] For some of the weavers, the reaction to this abuse was simply one of despair. Among the winders of raw silk, called *nagaads*, Bolts reported that the Company's practices led to a shocking form of self-mutilation, stating that 'instances have been known of their cutting off their thumbs to prevent their being forced to wind silk'.[51]

It is difficult to imagine the scale of economic violence required to force skilled workers to harm themselves in this way. Apart from Bolts, however, no other evidence exists for this or similar incidents. This has not stopped it achieving apocryphal status as a symbol of the physical and psychological pain inflicted by the Company's takeover of Bengal. Indeed, the image remains alive in popular memory across the subcontinent, as poet Shahid Ali expressed in his 1980s poem, 'Dacca Gauzes':

> In history, we learned: the hands
> of weavers were amputated,
> the looms of Bengal silenced,
> and the cotton shipped raw
> by the British to England.

History of little use to her,
my grandmother just says
how the muslins of today
seem so coarse and that only
in autumn, should one wake up
at dawn to pray, can one feel that same texture again.[52]

AN OPULENT REVOLUTION

When Clive headed for England for the final time in February 1767, the long-term consequences of Plassey were obscure. Bengal was now the Company's star possession. But Madras remained hard-pressed, threatened by French intervention, Maratha incursion and the rising force of Mysore; it would take another three decades to secure southern India. Clive was confident, however, that his actions over the preceding ten years had endowed the Company with an unrivalled 'estate'. In spite of all the 'envy, malice, faction and resentment' that was now building up against the Company, Clive was proud of his accomplishments and believed that the Company could justly claim to be 'the most opulent company in the world'.[53] In practical terms, this opulence was worth an estimated £38,400,000 for the Company between 1757 and 1780 in terms of goods transferred back to Britain on an unrequited basis.[54] Clive took with him a fortune worth approximately £400,000 and left behind a beloved mansion four miles north of Calcutta at Dum Dum. Currently being restored by the Archaeological Survey of India, there is talk of establishing a museum on the site. Two hundred and fifty years on, however, disputes still rage over how this 'little Mogul' should be remembered in his former home.

For some, Clive was a single-minded genius, for others an unethical rogue. Of course, he was both and more. It was his guile that enabled the Company first to regain Calcutta and then execute the Plassey master-stroke that humbled the authority of the Bengal state, smashed the Asian merchant class and eliminated the competitive threat from France. All of this can be traced back to Clive's calculated opportunism, a willingness to break any rule to achieve his goal. Rather than being somehow 'sucked in' by an internal crisis within the Bengal elite, Clive and the Company executives who worked with him were quite deliberate in their efforts to exploit every opportunity for promoting their own and their employers' interests. He was the great 'revolutionist', the 'nabob-maker' extraordinaire.

But Clive was more than just a powerful individual; he was the chief representative of a corporate machine that worked with remorseless logic to achieve its ends. It may have seemed luxurious, but the nawabi state was distracted by multiple enemies, divided internally by intrigue at court and lacking the institutional resilience to protect it against external assault from a single-minded opponent. Imperial historians have made much of the fact that the Company's directors had not drawn up a prearranged plan for conquest, making the Bengal Revolution somehow 'accidental'. But Clive's actions were entirely consistent with long-standing instructions from London to secure its possessions overseas. With the acquisition of the *diwani* rights, he had gained a windfall of immense proportions, attracting praise from everyone.

The Company's 'great revolution' in Bengal deserves to be placed alongside other better-known revolutions – the American, French and Russian – for the way that it shaped the modern world. In the space of less than a decade, the Company had rerouted the flow of wealth westwards. Yet, this was a corporate revolution, designed to acquire the riches of an entire people for the benefit of a single company. It was not patriots, republicans or Bolsheviks who had taken power, but a company of merchants answerable to persistent shareholders in London. Even its own deputy-chairman, Laurence Sulivan, confessed that this was a situation 'monstrous in reason'. No wonder that the house these merchants had built soon came crashing down.

5
The Great East Indian Crash

TO THE WAREHOUSE

The question, of course, was where to store all this Indian loot. Back in England, the Company jealously guarded its imports from the East in warehouses across the City of London. As well as being a financial centre, eighteenth-century London was also a site of physical exchange, and the warehouse was its archetypal building. The Company's warehouses were situated throughout the City on Lime Street, Fenchurch Street – next to where the East India Arms still stands – Seething Lane, Still Yard and Crutched Friars. But with the boom in imports that followed Plassey, the Company simply ran out of space. Shipping the treasure out of Bengal in the form of silver bullion was impractical, and so the Company decided to return wealth to its shareholders by expanding the scale of its purchase of Bengal goods, notably textiles.

The acquisition of the *diwani* in 1765 further accentuated the pressure to use physical trade as the mechanism to transfer Bengal's taxes back to England. As the Bengal Council wrote to the Company's directors in 1769, 'Your trade from hence may be considered more as a channel for conveying your revenues to Britain, than as only a mercantile system.'[1] The Company expanded its fleet – boosting the profits of its shipping interest' – and a record 33 ships were hired for the 1768–9 season. To cope with this surge in goods, the Company constructed new warehouses at Brown's Yard near the Tower of London, and in 1771, it opened the Bengal Warehouse in Bishopsgate to hold muslins, calicoes and raw silk. Word of what lay within soon spread, and the Bengal Warehouse became the target for London's criminal fraternity, eager to get their hands on the valuable materials that were stored inside. In January 1773, for example, three thieves were brought to trial at the Old Bailey for the theft of 628 silk handkerchiefs from the warehouse, for which they were transported overseas, probably never to return.

Twenty years later, the Bengal Warehouse became part of the massive Cutler Street complex, much of which still stands today. Six stories high, the buildings are well-designed and surprisingly

elegant – with Doric windows and Piranesian staircases – and yet tough enough to survive more than two centuries of wear and tear. After the East India Company lost its commercial monopoly in 1833, the warehouses were sold off, but were kept in use right up until the 1970s. Redeveloped as office blocks – the warehouses of the financial age – the buildings continue to communicate something of the power they would have exuded in the wake of Plassey. The stairway that winds its way up through the Old Bengal Warehouse is still the original, constructed of granite and ironware, eight feet wide to allow the easy passage of bales of cloth and chests of tea. No goods are on display today. But in the early part of the twentieth century, the poet John Masefield toured the complex, and left these lines describing the impression it made:

> You showed me nutmegs and nutmeg husks
> Ostrich feathers and elephant tusks
> Hundreds of tons of costly tea
> Packed in wood by the Cingalee
> And a myriad drugs which disagree
> Cinnamon, myrrh, and mace you showed
> Golden paradise birds that glowed
> And a billion cloves in an odorous mount
> And choice port wine from a bright glass fount
> You showed, for a most delightful hour
> The wealth of the world, and London's power.[2]

These solid buildings could also tell another story. When the Company commissioned the Bengal Warehouse, it was at the height of its powers. For almost ten years following Plassey, East India Company shares had become the focus of intense international speculative activity, pumped up by successive announcements of ever-grander acquisitions in the East. Between February 1758 when news of the victory at Plassey reached London and December 1768, when the Company bought the land for the Bengal Warehouse, the Company's shares had doubled to stand at £276. But this was to be the peak of the boom. Five months later, in May 1769, news reached London that not only had a French fleet entered the Indian Ocean, but that Hyder Ali, Sultan of Mysore, had invaded the Company's possessions in south India. The share price fell 16 per cent in a single month, and would continue a downward course for the next 15 years, reaching the depths of £122 in July 1784, a fall of 55 per cent. Although the Company went ahead with the construction of

the Bengal Warehouse, all other plans were put on hold until its fortunes had turned in the 1790s. It would only be in 1824, a full 40 years after prices had reached the bottom, that the Company's shares would regain the heady heights of 1768. The scale of the Company's financial slump can be measured by the fact that it took only 30 years for the New York exchange to regain the value it had reached on the eve of the Great Crash of 1929.

ROTTING FROM THE HEAD

What brought about this collapse in the Company's fortunes was the convergence of a whole series of forces. Unexpected events and the actions of individuals certainly played their part. But much of what took place was encoded into the Company's institutional structure. Perhaps the most fundamental challenge that all institutions face is to ensure that employees promote the collective rather than their individual self-interest. With joint stock companies, this primordial tension is accentuated by two additional forces: the separation of ownership from executive control, and the speculative potential of publicly traded shares. For the East India Company, the challenge of control went further still, as its directors needed to maintain an uneasy balance between the Company's own concerns and the private trading of its executives.

Private trade became one of a series of cancers that gnawed at the Company's ethical fibre. The taking of bribes from local merchants to secure business was commonplace, and these 'presents' would influence the quality and costs of the commodities the Company purchased. The Company laid down clear rules of behaviour to its staff, and made each pledge covenants, backed by sizeable bonds. But through both a lack of will and a lack of means the Company 'was very unsuccessful in checking corruption even when it was discovered' and 'found it hard to punish the guilty'.[3] Nevertheless, these perennial problems could be kept in check when the Company was just one of many companies battling to secure their slice of the Asia trade, and when local rulers retained a degree of regulatory capacity.

Plassey changed all this, removing all constraints on good practice. More than this, the intensification of corrupt practices was driven by the Company's own leaders in both the Calcutta Council and the London Directorate. A new catchphrase entered the language – 'a lass and a lakh [a *lakh* being Rs100,000] a day' – to describe the lifestyle of the Company's executives in Bengal

enjoying voluptuous mistresses (*bibis)* and their generous presents from state officials and Asian merchants. In London, the hot breath of Plassey was felt immediately at East India House. For the first time since the battle between Child and Papillon, the board was split into competing factions. Hitherto, elections to the Company's board had generally been uncontested, with shareholders happy to support the slate of house candidates on the back of steady capital gains and healthy dividend payments. But the prospects of opulence that Plassey presented meant that control of the Company had become a valuable source of plunder and patronage. Civil war broke out among the shareholders, as rival groups sought to seize the helm. Meetings of the Court of Proprietors soon became 'large, stormy, even riotous', with 'indecently virulent' debates.[4]

On one side stood Laurence Sulivan, and on the other, the rising power of the Bengal Squad, led by Robert Clive. Sulivan had made his fortune in Bombay and first became a director in 1755 at the age of 52. Sulivan was no saint. Yet, by the standards of the day, he was generally regarded as competent and relatively clean-handed. In April 1758, he was elected chairman for the first time and would dominate affairs for the next five years. Almost immediately he took steps to rein in Clive and his band of adventurers. In words that echo the earlier critique of Alivardi Khan, the directors wrote to Clive, 'you seem so thoroughly possessed with military ideas as to forget your employers are merchants and trade their principal object'.[5] What really enraged Sulivan, however, was Clive's *jagir*. This had been awarded by Mir Jafar in return for Clive's assistance against yet another invasion of Bengal. Along with a grand-sounding Mughal title, the *jagir* came with an endowment of land that yielded annual revenues worth around £30,000. Mischievously, Mir Jafar had indicated that the land which would provide these revenues was none other than the Company's own 24 *parganas*. Not only was Clive already far richer than any of the directors back in Leadenhall Street, but he was now also the Company's landlord in its Bengal heartland.

Open conflict broke out in 1761 when Sulivan warned Clive that his *jagir* was unjustified. Two years later, Sulivan suspended payment. Clive reacted with fury and mobilised his personal fortune to overturn the decision. To do this, Clive had to break the rules that limited each shareholder to a single vote regardless of the size of their holding. By splitting his holding into £500 chunks, Clive was able to create an army of over 220 artificial shareholders voting for his case. Sulivan followed suit, creating another 160 votes and called on

Lord Shelburne's ministry to use its resources to stem Clive's bid for power. In March 1763, this stock-splitting ensured that the numbers of votes cast in the Court of Proprietors was more than triple those in 1758, representing an unprecedented 1,400 shareholders.

Sulivan scraped through, and quickly ordered a halt to all payments of Clive's *jagir* from Company lands. But Sulivan's reign was coming to an end. At the beginning of February, news of Mir Kasim's attempts to quell the anarchy of private trade reached London. Sulivan backed the cause of regulation and demanded that 'a final and effectual end be forthwith put to the inland trade in salt, betel-nut and tobaccos'.

The Bengal Squad had other ideas. Clive issued a public manifesto to win over the Company's shareholders, complaining that 'the unjust attack on my character has been followed by an attack on my fortune' with the removal of the *jagir*. Admitting that 'the Nabob's generosity had made my fortune easy', he argued that 'all my actions' in the service of the Proprietors had been based on 'honourable motives'. But he kept the clinching argument to the end, asking the shareholders to consider 'whether they think without the battle of Plassey, the East India Company would have been at this time existing?'[6] When the shareholders gathered in April 1764, the answer was a clear 'no'. Sulivan was overthrown, Clive's *jagir* reinstated for ten years and the hero of Plassey was made President of the Calcutta Council with a mission to restore order in Bengal. The proprietors also passed a resolution forbidding Company executives from receiving presents. But the ban was ostentatiously ignored by the Calcutta Council who engineered a final flurry of £114,000 in gifts when Mir Jafar's son, Najim-ud-Daula, became Nawab in February 1765.

AN EXCLUSIVE TRADE

Clive stage-managed his mission to Bengal, piously presenting himself as an avenging-angel sent to clean out the 'Augean stables' of corruption. Writing back to the Company's directors in September 1765, he proclaimed that the tyranny and oppression he found 'will, I fear, be a lasting reproach to the English name in this country'.[7] Contrasting his own conduct with the rapacity of his fellow executives, Clive would later confess to Parliament in May 1772 that he did not gain 'a single shilling' from his spell in Bengal. But his actions told otherwise.

Insider trading was the first arena that Clive chose to exploit his position. Even before he had fixed the *diwani* settlement, Clive was writing back to one of his attorneys, John Walsh, to buy as much Company stock as possible. After the acquisition had been made, his instructions became more urgent, pressing his agents and friends 'to lose no time in purchasing all the stock you can, for I am persuaded the stock of the Company must be doubled in three years by the surplus of the country only'.[8] Historian Huw Bowen has charted how Clive's agents back in England acted on his persistent urgings, buying stock before the news of the *diwani* hit London's stock markets. In all, £30,000 of nominal stock worth over £51,000 was bought for Clive in the months that followed, taking his total stake to £75,000. This put him in a fantastic position to benefit from the uplift that the shares received when the markets digested the implications of the *diwani*. He would later make a well-timed disposal of some of his shares in May 1767, doubling his money in the process.

Clive also turned his hand to private trade, despite the directors' insistent ban on all involvement in Bengal's internal market. A month after his arrival in Calcutta, he formed a syndicate that turned a profit of 45 per cent from the trade in salt over the next six months. Then in August 1765 came his cunning plan to eliminate the anarchy of private trade by installing an exclusive business in its place. A peculiar 'special purpose vehicle' known as the Society of Trade was established with monopoly rights over the trade in betel nut, salt and tobacco, with shares allocated free to the Company's leading executives in Calcutta. Out of 56 shares, Clive allocated himself five, or just under 10 per cent of this elite enterprise. The ten other members of the Council received two shares each, but lower down the chaplain only got two-thirds of a share, and the poor sub-export warehouse keeper a measly one-third of a share. By this measure, a tiny gang of 60 executives simply engrossed the whole of the inland trade, excluding not only Asian merchants, but also junior executives and independent European traders. In theory, the scheme would provide the Company's elite with sufficiently high returns that they would not be tempted by private trade; the Company would also receive a guaranteed flow of revenues from duty payments. The reality was scandalous, doubling prices for salt, defaulting on duty payments and siphoning off profits for a select few. Clive alone received £21,000 in profits from the first year of trading.

When the Company's directors learned of this novel money-making machine in 1766, they protested that it was 'a determined resolution to sacrifice the interests of the Company and the peace of the country to lucrative and selfish views',[9] forbidding any executive from taking part. Just as with the ban on presents, however, Clive and the Calcutta Council studiously ignored the directors' orders for as long as they could, only winding up its affairs in September 1768. Public opinion back in London was incensed by Clive's Society of Trade scam. For the *Gentleman's Magazine*, Clive's establishment of a monopoly over the necessaries of life had 'signed the death warrant for two millions of his fellow creatures'.[10]

As Machiavelli would have warned, Clive may have been brilliant as a 'merchant prince' winning Bengal for the Company, but he was precisely the wrong person to establish durable systems of governance. Boosting his own interests on one hand, he cracked down hard on the perks enjoyed by others, generating a vast store of bitterness that would soon transfer back to the Court of Proprietors. More serious perhaps was his persistent overestimation of the financial value of his acquisitions, creating the expectation back in London that 'a torrent of treasure' was about to flow into the Company's coffers'.[11] If Spiridione took inspiration from anyone in his grandiose depiction of Asian wealth it was from Clive.

THE BENGAL BUBBLE

It was not just Clive who became entangled in this speculative whirl. For London's investors, the temptation also proved irresistible. During the 1750s, the Company's declining fortunes had propelled its share price downwards to just £133 in January 1757. Shares rallied 7 per cent when ships reached England with word of Plassey. But the dislocation caused by the Seven Years' War meant that the Company's shares fell back to just £112 in January 1762. The onset of peace in 1763 brought renewed confidence to the markets, and a slow upward trend (see Figure 5.1).

When news of the *diwani* reached London on 19 April 1766, the Company's shares stood at £165. Following Clive's lead, British and foreign investors piled into East India stock. Looking back from his vantage point 70 years later, Macaulay describes the time as one of 'feverish excitement', driven by 'an ungovernable impatience to be rich', and 'a contempt for slow, sure, and moderate gains'. By the middle of June, the price had surged to £187, buoyed up by expectations of an enhanced dividend. Initially, the speculators

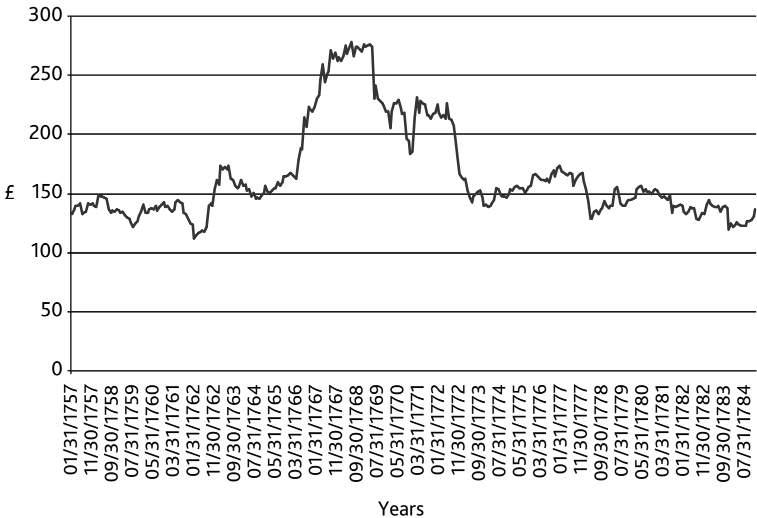


Figure 5.1 The Company's share price 1757–1784

were disappointed when the directors managed to defeat a motion increasing the dividend from 6 to 8 per cent at the June quarterly meeting. But this hungry force could not be stopped. Speculators continued to buy into Company stock over the summer, this time determined to form a majority to win returns on their investment. At the next meeting in September, these efforts were rewarded when the Court of Proprietors voted to increase the dividend from 6 to 10 per cent against the directors' wishes. By Christmas, shares were trading at £223, a gain of 33 per cent.

Soon all London was obsessed with the wealth that the Company's acquisitions in Bengal would generate. Foreign interest was also strong with over a fifth of the Company's shareholders residing in the Netherlands. In May 1767, shareholders met once more to take a larger slice of Bengal's wealth. In one of the longest meetings in the Company's history, shareholders debated from noon on 18 May to 4 a.m. the following day on the dividend rate, eventually voting themselves an increase from 10 to 12.5 per cent. But before this could be paid, the government intervened, itself eager to profit from the *diwani*, not least to pay off its massive war debts. The Company was forced to make an annual payment of £400,000, and Parliament passed an unprecedented Dividend Act in June fixing the dividend to 10 per cent. But the Company's share price barely flickered, continuing its upward trajectory.

Prices were also being driven by the actions of market intermediaries, the 'bulls' and 'bears', who had had such a hand in the South Sea Bubble. The goal of the bulls was to pump up the price: 'today a man appears as a bull and endeavours to magnify every circumstance to obtain a momentary rise'. But shifts in market sentiment could change the same person into a 'bear', aiming to push down the shares so that he could later buy cheap, all for 'clogging and multiplying every expense of the company and for depreciating every advantage she possesses'.[12] For market observers, it was the innocent who were gulled by these shifting moods. 'To see sheep driven to the butchery', wrote one, 'is not more affecting than to see those innocent dupes, male and female, hurried into India House to vote away the value of the little property they possess.'

April 1769 was the peak of the frenzy. At a cost of continuing the £400,000 transfer to the government, Sulivan had managed to win back the right to increase the dividend up to a maximum of 12.5 per cent. The stage was set for the April elections of the directors, which surpassed all others in stock-splitting, 'the most extraordinary piece of jockeyship', when large holdings were split by contending factions with 'Machiavellian finesse'.[13] Then on Tuesday 23 May 1769, the East India ship, the *Valentine*, was reported safely home. But the news it brought of renewed conflict in south India was devastating, and share prices plummeted from £273 to £230 in a month. Writing to the leading politician Lord Shelburne in July of 1769, the financier Israel Barre concluded that 'there never was since the South Sea year so great a crush in stock matters'.[14]

Many of London's elite were nearly ruined in the crash, not least Laurence Sulivan who had increased his holdings to win the April elections. He would send his son, Stephen, to Bengal to redeem the family fortunes under the watchful eye of his protégé, Warren Hastings. The Burkes – brothers Edmund and Richard, and namesake William – were also left severely embarrassed by the slump. William Burke had been among the first to bull the Company's stock in 1766 in a consortium with the Burkes' patron, Lord Verney. Following the crash, William would seek to regain his fortune in India, eventually becoming the agent of the Rajah of Tanjore, while Richard would head for the West Indies. Neither was able to shake off a reputation for unprincipled share-dealing. Edmund, author of *The Sublime and the Beautiful*, and rising star of the Whigs, protested his innocence of all malpractice. But his new-bought country estate in Beaconsfield was placed at risk by the Company's reversal of fortunes, and for the next few years, Edmund

would be a strong advocate of both Robert Clive and the Company's chartered privileges against the increasing assaults from Parliament.

THE PERISHING

While the London establishment was contemplating the costs of its financial excesses in the summer of 1769, across the world in Bengal a drought of unprecedented ferocity was just commencing. For six whole months from August 1769 to January 1770, the monsoon rains failed to arrive, delivering a chronic water shortage that destroyed up to half the crops, particularly in the west and north-west of Bengal. With the New Year, drought started to turn into famine. Plentiful rain fell in June 1770, but 'hopes of relief were disappointed by the overflowing of the rivers in the eastern provinces', adding flood to famine.[15]

Famine had been an established part of India's social reality for thousands of years, and was only truly defeated following Independence in 1947. Early English travellers had commented with horror on the scale of the terrible famine of 1631, which had severely disrupted normal trade. Yet, the incidence of famine expanded dramatically, first under the Company and then under the British Crown. In fact, British control of India started with a famine in Bengal in 1770 and ended in a famine – again in Bengal – in 1943. Working in the midst of the terrible 1877 famine that he estimated had cost another 10 million lives, Cornelius Walford calculated that in the 120 years of British rule there had been 34 famines in India, compared with only 17 recorded famines in the entire previous two millennia.[16] One of the factors that explained this divergence was the Company's abandonment of the Mughal system of public regulation and investment. Not only did the Mughals use tax revenues to finance water conservation, thus boosting food production, but when famine struck they imposed 'embargos on food exports, anti-speculative price regulation, tax relief and distribution of free food'.[17] More brutally, if merchants were found to have short-changed peasants during famines, an equivalent weight in human flesh would be taken from them in exchange.

Like previous failures of the natural cycle, the inadequate monsoon of 1769 in Bengal could have been managed without great loss of life. But the Company had significantly increased Bengal's vulnerability to natural disaster. Bengal had been picked clean by the Company and its executives in the preceding decade. Revenue

collection had increased dramatically from just £606,000 the year before the Company took over the *diwani* to a peak of £2,500,000 two years later. Flows of bullion into Bengal fell from £345,000 in 1764 to £54,000 in 1765, and ceased entirely in 1766. Instead, silver started leaving Bengal to pay for the Company's tea trade. By 1769, Richard Becher, the Company's Resident at Murshidabad, admitted with some shame that 'the condition of the people of this country has been worse than it was before', arguing that 'this fine country, which flourished under the most despotic and arbitrary government, is verging towards its ruin while the English have so great a share in the Administration'.[18]

Throughout 1769, the Company monitored the situation, and in November, the Calcutta Council wrote back to London that revenues would be reduced in the year ahead. A harrowing letter published under the name of J.C. in the *Gentleman's Magazine* in September 1771 reveals the unrelenting pursuit of self-interest that governed the Company's approach to the crisis. Rather than take action to curb price speculation in grain, 'as soon as the dryness of the season foretold the approaching dearness of rice', wrote J.C., 'our Gentlemen in the Company's service were as early as possible in buying up all they could lay hold of'.[19] The peasants quickly complained to the Nawab that the English had 'engrossed all the rice'. But when these accusations were put before the Company's Calcutta Council, the complaint was met with howls of laughter and thrown out. Huge fortunes were made as Company staff cornered the market. One junior executive accumulated over £60,000, as rice prices soared from 120 *seers* of rice per rupee at the beginning of the famine to just three *seers* a rupee in June 1770. At the time, a *seer* was equivalent to about 2 lb in weight. The Nawab and other Bengali nobles tried to respond in the traditional way and distributed rice free of charge. But because of the hoarding by the Company's executives, their stocks were soon depleted.

As the famine intensified, thousands flocked to Calcutta, many dying in the streets. Whoever he was, J.C. clearly had humanitarian feelings and would hand out food to the starving who gathered near his Calcutta residence. But he was also squeamish. On one occasion, he sent his servants to get the starving to move away from his house. But one of the near-dead rebelled, and cried out: 'Baba! Baba!, my Father, My Father! This affliction comes from the hands of your countrymen, and I am come here to die, if it pleases God, in your presence.'[20] J.C. concludes his letter by describing Calcutta's good

fortune of having both vultures and dogs to deal with the dead – the first to take out the eyes and intestines, and the latter to gnaw the feet and the hands.

With no pictures or photographs to drive home the horror of the event, we are left with eye-witness accounts of the living feeding off the dead, of the Hugli full of swollen bodies and, in the words of Karim Ali, author of *Muzaffarnamah*, of whole families being yielded up to the 'talons of the wrath of the godless'.[21] However, the Company's first concern was to feed its army and then to ensure that its taxes were secure. Not only did the Company continue to collect its land revenues throughout the famine – instead of introducing some form of relief in the Mughal fashion – but it actually increased the rate. In February 1771, Calcutta reported back to the directors that 'notwithstanding the great severity of the late famine and the great reduction of people thereby, some increase has been made' in revenue collection.[22] Many of the Company's leading executives used their position to purchase grain by force – even seed for the next year's planting – and then sold this at famine prices in the big cities of Calcutta and Murshidabad. Eventually, the Company did act, providing Rs90,000 in relief, a pittance in a land of some 30 million people with annual revenues of over Rs17 million. Even later imperial historians admitted that the Company did not even 'attempt to cope with the disaster'.[23] This was a man-made catastrophe.

The absence of comprehensive records means that it is impossible to calculate accurately the numbers of those who died in the famine. In 1772, Warren Hastings estimated that 10 million Bengalis had starved to death, equating to perhaps a third of the population. Hastings also concluded that the famine was caused by an artificial shortage of food supplies caused by market manipulation. For this, Hastings blamed the local merchants, ignoring the role of the Company executives themselves. Mortality was highest among low-income groups, the rural artisans and urban poor, neither of whom had direct access to food stocks. In Purnea, one of the worst-affected districts, the Company's agent reported that 'on the high and sandy soils, more than half the *ryots* are dead'.[24] Mortality in Malda also approached 50 per cent, while in Rajshahi between a third and a half of the people died, and in Birbhum up to a quarter perished. Re-examining the data, Rajat Datta has recently argued that the accepted estimate of 10 million deaths is inflated, suggesting a death toll of 1.2 million instead.[25] Yet, even if this more

conservative figure is taken, the terrible outcome of the famine can still be barely understood. This was a time when the population of London was well under a million. All of these and more would have been wiped out if the famine had hit the Company's home town, instead of far-off Bengal. In effect, London would have been left a ghost town. Instead, it was Bengal that was depopulated, with one-third of the Company's territory lying 'as jungle inhabited only by wild beasts'.[26]

The sheer barbarity of the Company's conduct during the 1770 famine lies in its refusal to temper its demands for taxes with a sense of responsibility for the people of Bengal. As Warren Hastings acknowledged in a letter to the Company's directors in November 1772, 'it was naturally to be expected that the diminution of the revenue should have kept an equal pace with other consequences of so great a calamity'. The reason that revenues were maintained was 'owing to its being violently kept up to its former standard'.[27] Tucked away in the engaging autobiography of Dean Mahomet is a description of what this violence meant in practice. Better known for pioneering Indian cuisine in England and becoming the 'Shampooing Surgeon to His Majesty King George IV', Mahomet had initially followed his father in a career with the Company's army. In the opening section of his book, Mahomet describes how his father had helped to suppress a rebellion by Rajah Budhmal in 1769. Complaining of the 'great dearth', the Rajah had argued that it was impossible for him to pay his allotted share of taxation. The Company rejected this plea, and sent in troops to imprison the Rajah. But the violence spiralled out of control, eventually resulting in the death of Mahomet's father.[28] The following year Mahomet himself joined the Company's forces, and he describes a series of engagements between Bhagalpur and Rajmahal to eliminate the Pahareas, who opposed Company rule and robbed travellers. To 'strike terror', the Company suspended some of its captives 'on a kind of gibbet, ignominiously exposed along the mountain's conspicuous brow'. Mahomet's band of sepoys moved on, and 'as we proceeded on our march, we beheld the lifeless bodies of these nefarious wretches elevated along the way for a considerable distance'.[29] For the Pahareas, their fate was equivalent to Spartacus' defeated slaves, crucified and staked along the roads of Rome. But the Pahareas were not the only rebels against famine taxation. There is some evidence that peasants joined the *sufi* rebels of Shah Manju in his *sannyasi* revolt against the Company.[30]

A CATASTROPHIC FAILURE OF MANAGEMENT

The Bengal Famine stands out as perhaps one of the worst examples of corporate mismanagement in history. Yet, the preconditions for such a disaster had been in place for decades. The onrush of easy money from coups and corruption extinguished the scrupulous concern for trade that had previously characterised the Company's management. While those in England squabbled over how to divide the spoils, in India all systems of administrative control broke down, allowing abuse to flourish at the expense of both the people of Bengal and the Company itself. William Bolts captured this dual collapse perfectly when he wrote in 1772, 'while this nation is gazing after the fruit, the Company and their substitutes are suffered to be rooting up the tree'.[31] Remittances home from the Company's executives stood at just £79,000 in 1756. But following the victory at Plassey, they would average an annual £500,000 in the years to 1784.[32] In 1770–71, in the midst of the Bengal Famine, a staggering £1,086,255 was transferred home by the Company's executives – equivalent to nearly £120 million in twenty-first-century terms.[33]

Executives in India lost sight of their commercial purpose, and observers in London lamented the declining quality of the textiles that were now sent back from Bengal, which exhibited 'no assortment, no taste, nothing new either to furnish variety to the old or to engage new markets'.[34] Added to this, embezzlement became widespread. Writing much later, Warren Hastings would complain in 1782 that 'every article of the investment is provided for the Company at 30 or 40 or even 50 per cent beyond its real cost'.[35] All notions of cost control evaporated as military force became a vital part of the Company's operations, and membership of the officer corps purchased a share of the plunder following a successful military adventure. While the numbers of soldiers under Company command grew four times during the 1760s, the numbers of officers expanded ten-fold to take advantage of the plunder of war. By 1770–71, the Company's military and commercial spending in Bengal had reached £3,210,000, 50 per cent more than its revenues.

Far-sighted observers quickly concluded that the scale of the Company's acquisitions overwhelmed its management capabilities. Even before the acquisition of the *diwani*, Charles Jenkinson was writing that 'the affairs of this Company seem to become much too big for the management of a body of merchants'.[36] Crucially, the boardroom battles in London had made the Company a plaything of competing shareholder forces, sending a clear signal to the

management of its subsidiaries in the East that the Company was now ripe for liquidation from within. In a revealing minute written by Clive in September 1766, the hero of Plassey traced the problem to 'the conduct of governors, who, too eager in the pursuit of private interest, have involved themselves in affairs which could not be reconciled to the strict principles of integrity' – as ever, excusing his own conduct from criticism.[37]

What had allowed the 'get rich-quick' appetites of the Company's executives to take hold so disastrously was the removal of the Nawab's regulatory authority. Just as a great oak or deodar provides valuable shade in a forest, so strong regulation provides the framework within which the economic ecosystem can flourish; weaken or remove it and anarchy and oppression will follow. In so many ways, the long-term interests of the Company as a trading concern would have been better served through partnership with a strong local ruler rather than market domination. By the end of the 1760s, the Company's directors were recognising that Bengal had been a hollow acquisition. Instead of the untold riches they had expected, the Company had 'only exchanged a certain profit in commerce for a precarious one in revenue'.[38]

In London, news of the famine generated a genuine sense of horror and humanitarian concern. The first inklings of what was taking place reached London in December 1770, when the *Gentleman's Magazine* reported that 'provisions were so scarce in the Company's new acquisitions that parents brought their children to sell them for a morsel of bread'.[39] When the full story became known, horror turned to outrage at the Company's negligence. As Horace Walpole wrote at the time, 'we have murdered, deposed, plundered, usurped – nay, what think you of the famine in Bengal, in which three millions perished, being caused by a monopoly of provisions by the servants of the East Indies'.[40]

DUPES FOR A DIVIDEND

But business was business. As the famine intensified, Company shareholders were focused on making up for their losses, and in December 1769, the Company's proprietors had taken advantage of Sulivan's deal with the government and raised the dividend to 11 per cent. In September 1770, this was boosted to 12 per cent. And then in March 1771, the same month as the *Gentleman's Magazine* reported the 'great miseries to which the inhabitants are reduced by famine and pestilence', the Company's shareholders voted to

raise the dividend to 12.5 per cent.[41] The share price started to recover, hitting £226 once more in May 1771. But this was a fool's bounce. The Company's finances were being consumed from within. Although the Company's imports from Bengal certainly appeared healthy, they were now being financed in part by loans from its own executives in India, who were flush with the gains from private trade and plunder. Made out in the form of bills of exchange, these loans were then redeemed back in London. Theoretically, the Company should have easily been able to afford to honour these bills of exchange. But the means at its disposal was being eroded by the boycott of its once prosperous tea trade with the American colonies. Furthermore, the share price fall of 1769 was still working its way like acid through Europe's financial system. Many speculators had bought the Company's shares on credit, and when the stock price fell were left ruined.

The Company's political status was also under fire as revelations of corporate misconduct started to roll off London's printing presses. In January 1772, William Bolts's explosive *Considerations on Indian Affairs* was published in London. Bolts had been a rising star of the Company's Bengal operations, but had been expelled after clashing with the governing elite. Bolts's revenge was sweet and came in the form of a penetrating assault on the Company's systems of governance. 'The Company may be compared to a stupendous edifice', he wrote, 'suddenly built upon a foundation not previously well examined or secured, inhabited by momentary proprietors and governors, divided by different interests opposed to each other; and who, while one set of them is overloading the superstructure, another is undermining the foundations.'[42] The 'momentary proprietors' that Bolts scorned so intensely voted themselves another 12.5 per cent dividend in March, and then, three months later, the foundations started to give way.

On 8 June, a Scottish banker called Alexander Fordyce working in London disappeared. Fordyce had been intimately involved in the London markets, and had sold the Company's shares short, expecting them to fall further. The fool's bounce had ruined his plans, and he left debts of £550,000. Many of these were owed to Scotland's banking firm, Douglas, Heron & Co., popularly known as the Ayr Bank. The Ayr Bank promptly imploded, the start of a financial crisis across Europe. Another 30 banks collapsed in less than three weeks, creating a huge shortage of ready money, depressing business confidence and bringing trade to a standstill. In an unprecedented move, the Company postponed its September sale until November

in the hope that purchasing power would recover. But it now faced a three-fold crisis, with more than £1.5 million in outstanding bills of exchange, a long-overdue repayment of a £300,000 short-term loan from the Bank of England, along with nearly £1,000,000 in unpaid taxes to the government. On 15 July, the directors applied to the Bank of England for a loan of £400,000. Two weeks later, they were back, asking for another £300,000. This time the Bank could only produce £200,000. By August, the directors were secretly telling the government that it needed at least £1 million to bail it out. A story as big as this couldn't remain hidden for long, and on 18 September news of the Company's financial distress leaked out to the market, sending the shares down 10 per cent.

As accusations flew, the directors, who had kept the true state of affairs from their shareholders, announced that the precious dividend would have to be delayed. They also begged the government to waive the taxes the Company owed, and provide a loan to plug the gaping hole in its accounts. The traditional relationship of state and corporation was being reversed, with the government for once becoming the source of much-needed cash. Parliament was recalled early to consider what legislation was needed to prevent the situation spiralling out of control like the South Sea disaster had half a century before. A mood of vengeance was in the air, with parliamentarians in a mood to have 'hanged both Directors and servants'.[43] When the directors finally came face to face with the Court of Proprietors in December, two days before Christmas, all they could offer was a paltry 6 per cent annualised dividend. Furious shareholders 'arraigned the conduct of the Directors'. Six days later, facing the reality of empty coffers, the shareholders were forced to accept their measly offer.

How things had changed from the heady days of high prices and rich dividends. As one bitter observer concluded, 'the real dupes have been the steady, permanent old proprietors who look to the dividend as the means of their subsistence'.[44] In less than a decade, the Company had charted the classic boom-and-bust cycle, described so elegantly by the nineteenth-century economist, Walter Bagehot, as 'quiescence, improvement, confidence, prosperity, excitement, overtrading, CONVULSION, pressure, stagnation, ending again in quiescence'.[45] The tragedy then and now is how quickly memories of this cycle are smothered by the next surge, and how the real human consequences are sidelined. For the people of Bengal, the 'quiescence' following the East India Crash invariably meant the peace of the grave. Thousands lost jobs and savings at the end of

the stock market bubble in the late 1990s; in the Great East India Crash of the 1770s, millions lost their lives.

When Cutlers Gardens was redeveloped, a series of ceramic plaques were placed around the complex to mark its former use. An unnamed ship stood in the centre, and around the rim were marked the names of the commodities Masefield had wondered at: silks, skins, tea, ivory, carpets, spices, feathers, cotton. The plaques were discreet and neatly designed. Nowhere was the Company mentioned by name, and no reference was made to the human costs of these exotic commodities, nothing of the crash that once shook the world. But these plaques also proved ephemeral and were later removed as part of an architectural makeover. Once more, the Company's past becomes invisible.

Two hundred and thirty years ago, millions of pounds of unsold tea were piled high in the Company's warehouses across the City of London, a consequence of a successful boycott across Britain's American colonies. In the global economy of the late eighteenth century, one thing united American patriots, English parliamentarians and Indian peasants: it was now time to tame the beast.

6
Regulating the Company

THE SEISMOGRAPHER

One of those caught up in the backdraught of the East India crash was Adam Smith. Hard at work in the Fife seaport of Kirkcaldy, researching the mysteries of the global economy, Smith, along with much of the Scottish establishment, was knocked off balance by the precipitate collapse of the Ayr Bank. Writing from London, Smith's friend, the philosopher David Hume, enquired in June 1772 after the crash, 'do these events affect your Theory? What say you? Here is Food for your speculation.'[1] Smith had been close to completing what would become his masterpiece, *An Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations*. But the mood of financial chaos was so great that he confessed to William Pultenay in September that the book had been delayed owing to his efforts to extricate some of his friends from this 'public calamity'.

Eventually released to the world in March 1776, Smith's *Wealth of Nations* is one of the few books from the eighteenth century that still hold sway over the modern mind. In it, Smith puts forward an 'obvious and simple system of natural liberty', arguing that the open market was the most effective way of raising standards of living. Smith regarded the pursuit of individual improvement as an eternal (and entirely positive) feature of economic life, stating that 'it is not from the benevolence of the butcher, the brewer, or the baker that we expect our dinner, but from their regard to their self-interest'.[2] But Smith's outlook was far broader than the simply economic, and it was critical for him that transactions respected the 'laws of justice'.[3] This icon of the Scottish Enlightenment was Professor of Moral Philosophy at Glasgow University and viewed his discovery of the natural laws of wealth creation not as ends in themselves, but as stepping stones to the good society. In Smith's utopia, the relentless pursuit of self-interest is guided by 'an invisible hand' to produce outcomes that are beneficial for society as a whole.[4] By setting out an internally consistent model, Smith hoped to overturn the theoretical pillars of the prevailing mercantilist order that still tightly circumscribed economic life. But two institutions stood in

the way: the state and the corporation. The over-mighty state was a natural target for Smith, but so was the over-mighty corporation.

In striking contrast to those who have appropriated *The Wealth of Nations* for their pro-corporate policies, Smith had little place for the corporation in his vision of economic liberty. He was deeply suspicious of the commercial class as a whole, arguing that they 'come from an order of men, whose interest is never exactly the same with that of the publick, who have generally an interest to deceive and even to oppress the public, and who accordingly have, upon many occasions, both deceived and oppressed it'.[5] And while he viewed profit as a necessary output from economic activity, he argued that it would be 'naturally low in rich and high in poor countries, and it is always highest in the countries which are going fastest to ruin' – something of a slap in the face for those today who view high profits as the measure of everything.[6] But it was to the corporation that Smith was particularly opposed, a stance that was founded on a combination of theoretical antipathy, strengthened by the evidence of contemporary malpractice.

Here, the East India Company's fall from grace provided a mass of material for Smith's overall case. *The Wealth of Nations* had been written during the period when the Company's aggression overseas and speculation at home had dominated British public life, and it is no surprise that it features extensively in his pages. Smith was also well-connected in London's political circles, and his name was even put forward as a potential member of a committee of inquiry into the Company's collapse in 1772. For Smith, the Company's rise and fall held the secret to one of the greatest puzzles of his time: explaining the distribution of benefits from the rapidly increasing integration of the world economy. 'The discovery of America, and that of a passage to the East Indies by the Cape of Good Hope', argued Smith, 'are the two greatest and most important events recorded in the history of mankind.'[7] Smith's belief was that the full potential of this dramatic opening had not been realised, owing to a combination of colonies and corporations. For the natives of both the East and West Indies, 'all the commercial benefits have been sunk and lost' in a series of 'dreadful misfortunes'. In Asia, the agents of this pain were the Dutch and British East India Companies, monopoly corporations that he condemned as 'always more or less inconvenient to the countries in which they are established, and destructive to those which have the misfortune to fall under their government.'[8]

Earlier than most, Smith recognised that commercial success often comes not just from meeting consumer demand, but also

from building up market power to generate excess profits. 'To widen the market and to narrow the competition is always in the interest of the dealers,' Smith argued. The result of this anti-competitive behaviour was to raise profits above the natural level, amounting to 'an absurd tax upon the rest of their fellow citizens'.[9] Cartels are thus an ever-present danger in a market economy, and in Smith's immortal words, 'people of the same trade seldom meet together, but the conversation ends in a conspiracy against the public or in some contrivance to raise prices'.[10] Here, Smith gave an accurate description of the East India Company's shipping interest, the collection of ships' masters that leased the Company its vessels. The power of this 'confederacy' was such that the Company ended up leasing more ships than it needed at higher prices than were justified. This was an outcome explained in part by the fact that many of the ships' masters were also Company directors, a conflict of interest prohibited by Company by-laws but wholly ignored.[11]

More dangerous still was the establishment of exclusive corporations, such as the East India Company, which destroyed any pretence at competition. Monopoly corporations defied the logic of the market and resisted the 'reduction of price and consequently of wages and profit that free competition would most certainly occasion', according to Smith.[12] In this conclusion, Smith was drawing on the repeated experience of Asian commerce, when those scarce periods of open trading – such as in the Netherlands between 1595 and 1601, and in England between 1694 and 1702 – had resulted in higher prices for producers and lower prices for consumers, enhancing general welfare. Smith once again laid out the obvious defects of the Company's market dominance – not least the unjust exclusion of other English traders from the East, as well as the added expense for European consumers. But not only did the inhabitants of England pay 'for all the extraordinary profits which the company may have made upon those goods in consequence for their monopoly', but they also suffered from 'all the extraordinary waste which the fraud and abuse, inseparable from the management of the affairs of so great a company, must necessarily have occasioned'.[13] The Company's descent into malpractice was therefore no accident, but the inevitable and *necessary* product of a faulty institution. Monopoly didn't just create economic injustice, it was also 'a great enemy to good management'.[14] In Smith's vision of an open economy, entrepreneurs could not afford to displease their customers as these could easily choose alternate sources of supply. A monopoly corporation, like

the East India Company, faced none of these pressures for good conduct, and would therefore continue to condone practices that would otherwise have been stamped out.

For Smith, the Company was not just flawed as a commercial operation. After Plassey, political tyranny was added to the mix through the 'strange absurdity' of a joint stock corporation holding sovereign powers. For Smith, government by merchants was 'incurably faulty', stunting the natural growth of Bengal 'to what is barely sufficient for answering the demands of the company'. Sick of the callousness this engendered, Smith described the way in which the Company's executives sought to make a fortune and then leave Bengal as quickly as possible, 'perfectly indifferent though the whole country was swallowed up by an earthquake'.[15] In the form of the Bengal Famine, this earthquake had already struck.

FREEDOM OR SLAVERY

Smith was not alone in his criticism of the Company. Almost immediately after Clive's acquisition of the *diwani*, concerns arose about the social, political and ethical implications of this dramatic change in the Company's circumstances, concerns that would become more acute as evidence of gross mismanagement accumulated. After an initial rush of euphoria, real fears emerged about the raw political implications of the Company's rapid growth in wealth and power. This was a time of mounting discontent at the rottenness of the Georgian state, a struggle epitomised first by John Wilkes, the fiery MP for Middlesex, and then the series of letters penned by Junius. With its tight financial and political links with the ruling establishment, the Company was easily seen as yet another manifestation of 'old corruption'. Well-versed in the history of the Roman Republic, politicians and pamphleteers feared that just as the proceeds of Rome's conquest of Asia (western Anatolia) had been used to subvert its ancient freedoms, so the Company's takeover of Bengal would bring tyranny in England. 'The riches of Asia have been poured in upon us,' declared William Pitt the Elder, 'and have brought with them not only Asiatic luxury, but, I fear, Asiatic principles of government', conveniently forgetting the origins of his grandfather's own riches.

For many, the Company had become a monstrous hybrid, part Leadenhall Street merchant, part Oriental despot. As the *Gentleman's Magazine* concluded in April 1767, the issues at stake were not just about the wealth that the Company had acquired,

but 'whether the freedom or the slavery of this island shall result'.[16] Apprehension grew that the Company and its nabobs would use their wealth to subvert the delicate balance of powers between Crown and Parliament, introducing a corporate state. Ethical factors were added to the mix, driven by a genuine sense of outrage at the human costs of Company rule. Along with these points of political principle were a host of other factors, not least the sheer snobbery of the ruling aristocracy, who hated the way that mere merchants, such as Robert Clive, were able to buy themselves status, seats in Parliament and big houses in the country. And in the City, the Company's mercantile opponents were gathering once more under the leadership of the famous slave-trader and Lord Mayor, William Beckford, who raised the 'old cry for an open trade', threatening to remove the Company's charter so that all could have access to India.

Outside politics, the Company's practices in India became a central part of Britain's cultural landscape, with the corrupt 'nabob' as one of the stock literary characters of the age. An early example was the anonymous satire, *Debates in the Asiatic Assembly*, which mocked the self-serving practices of the Company's directors and shareholders – caricatured as Sir Janus Blubber, Shylock Buffaloe, Jaundice Braywell and Sir Judas Venom – along with the rapacity of Lord Vulture, a thinly disguised attack on Clive.[17]

Five years later, such views had become mainstream, providing the basis for Samuel Foote's play, *The Nabob*, which opened at the Haymarket Theatre in June 1772. This poked fun at the plunderers of India in the same way as Caryl Churchill's *Serious Money* attacked the Yuppies of the 1980s. In the play, Sir Matthew Mite is cast as the returning East Indian nabob 'profusely scattering the spoils of ruined provinces' aiming to use his loot to marry into an ancient but bankrupt family and buy election to Parliament for the borough of Bribe'em. He offers the Oldhams either 'five lacks of roupees' or a 'jaghire' for life in return for their country estate. But Mite is rebuffed, 'corrupt as you may conceive this country to be, there are superior spirits living who would disdain an alliance with grandeur obtained at the expense of honour or virtue'.[18] In the process, the audience is given an explanation of the origins of the East India Company's wealth in a priceless exchange between Master Touchit and Mr. Mayor:

Touchit: Oh, Mr. Mayor, I will explain that in a moment: Why, here are a body of merchants that beg to be admitted as friends, and take possession of a small spot in a country, and carry on a

beneficial commerce with the inoffensive and innocent people, to which they kindly give their consent.

Mayor: Don't you think now that is very civil of them?

Touchit: Doubtless. Upon which, Mr Mayor, we cunningly encroach, and fortify by little and by little, till at length, we growing too strong for the natives, we turn them out of their lands, and take possession of their money and jewels.

Mayor: And don't you think, Master Touchit, that is a little uncivil in us?

Touchit: Oh, nothing at all: These people are but little better than Tartars or Turks.

Mayor: No, no, Master Touchit; just the reverse; it is they have caught the Tartars in us.[19]

This emotional sympathy with the people of India across race, culture and distance enraged Clive who argued that 'there has not been one character found amongst them sufficiently flagitious for Mr. Foote to exhibit in the Haymarket' – when, of course, the character of Sir Matthew Mite with his 'roupees' and 'jaghires' was modeled on himself. Not denying that 'acts of violence and oppression' had been committed, Clive attempted to deflect the blame onto 'the Natives of the Country' acting as the Company's agents, 'for the most part without their knowledge'.[20]

REDRAWING THE CHARTER

For the East India Company, state intervention was a fact of life. Its entire existence was dependent on the regular renewal of its charter. For its part, the state viewed the Company as an important source of cheap finance and a way of outsourcing the pursuit of British interests in Asia. Plassey overturned the assumptions that underlay this mutually convenient bargain. Serious questions were raised not only about the Company's right to the plunder Clive had won, but also the legality of a mercantile corporation ruling overseas territories. The acquisition of the *diwani* merely accentuated the urgency of bringing these issues to some resolution.

For the next century, state and Company would struggle to find a settlement of this extraordinary situation. The practical and legal complexities meant that any intervention needed to be multi-dimensional, confronting the flaws in the Company's governance at home and abroad, the allocation of its Indian finances and the management of its monopoly. Money, power and principle were all at stake. Constitutionally, the state asserted its right to all conquests made by

British subjects overseas. Technically, however, the *diwani* was not a conquest, but a grant from the Mughal emperor who remained the nominal sovereign of Bengal. The Company also proclaimed that its chartered status gave it autonomy from state intervention in its internal affairs. Many were concerned that any attempt to restrain the Company would mark a dangerous infringement of the property rights of a legally established corporation. More importantly, perhaps, was the ever-practical question of who should command the immensely lucrative patronage that had been opened in the East. An appointment to the Company's service in India seemed a guarantee of rapid riches, and the Company was intent on preserving the directors' right of preferment. Competing factions in the establishment feared that if either Crown or Parliament gained control of this patronage, then it would become the arbiter of British politics. For all these reasons, the efforts that were made to reform the Company over successive decades would be designed as much to retain the balance of power in Britain as resolve mismanagement in India. No wonder that the results were anachronistic and unjust.

Ultimately, it was the need for hard cash that overshadowed constitutional niceties. The Seven Years' War (1756–63) had left Britain victorious, but almost bankrupt, and the Prime Minister, William Pitt the Elder, saw the *diwani* as a godsend to fill a gaping hole in the Treasury. To pre-empt the government, the directors proposed in November 1766 that all territorial revenues (minus expenses) should go to the Crown, in return for extending the charter for 37 years and agreeing to an indefinite annual dividend of 15 per cent. But the Company's shareholders protested, rejecting the proposal as too generous to the state, and in the following May, voted for a 12.5 per cent dividend, thereby foreclosing a substantial portion of the *diwani*. The government was furious, and quickly passed the Dividend Bill, limiting payments to 10 per cent while negotiations continued. Finally in January 1769, an agreement was reached whereby the government received £400,000 a year – in effect, a 'windfall tax' – and the Company retained the right to raise its dividend to a ceiling of 12.5 per cent. Questions of sovereignty were shelved for another day – not least in view of the fact that the Crown was wary of assuming the responsibilities for ruling India that this would entail.

The bursting of the Bengal bubble dramatically changed the situation, exposing the Company to charges of mismanagement in India. Many Members of Parliament had been shareholders and, as the stock price plummeted, a powerful body of aggrieved politicians

emerged, their anger inflamed by the reports from Bengal. Seeking to forestall further intervention, the Company despatched three supervisors to remedy the situation. But their ship, the *Aurora*, was lost with all hands en route to India. When the news reached London, the Company's directors appointed Warren Hastings as Governor in Bengal in 1771, and began preparations for a new piece of legislation giving the Company additional judicial powers to tame its executives abroad. But these last-minute efforts at self-regulation were hopelessly at odds with the needs of the situation. Sulivan's Judicature Bill was thrown out by Parliament in April 1772, and in its place a Select Committee formed, chaired by John Burgoyne, to investigate the Company's affairs. As a result, the Company was already being scrutinised by Parliament before its collapse in September.

AN END TO MERCANTILE AVARICE?

Burgoyne is better known for his role as the general who later lost the Battle of Saratoga during the American War of Independence. As chair of the Select Committee, he drew a succession of high-profile witnesses to explain the Company's actions all the way back to Plassey. Clive haughtily dismissed the committee's inquiries, arguing that he was innocent of any corrupt dealings, and even if he had taken presents, he could not understand 'what good reason could be given, after risking his life so often in the Company's service, if he had neglected the only honest opportunity that ever offered the acquiring a fortune and had rested intirely [sic] upon the generosity of any set of Directors?'[21] He then turned on his former employers themselves, accusing the directors of failing to rise to the challenge of the Bengal acquisition, treating it rather 'as a South Sea bubble than anything solid and substantial', adding 'they thought of nothing but the present time, regardless of the future'.[22]

By the time Parliament reconvened in the winter, the Company's financial debacle was common knowledge. Once again the directors tried to deal with its affairs by sending out a commission of supervisors – the body which Smith had been nominated for. Yet, this was all too late and failed to recognise the 'general odium' with which the Company was now regarded. The Prime Minister, Lord North, set up his own Secret Committee, which quickly flexed its muscles by proposing legislation stopping the commission from setting sail. Advantage had passed decisively to the state, and North made clear his intentions when he declared to Parliament

the following March, 'I think, Sir, it is allowed that Parliament have a right over the India Company.' Negotiations on the terms of the bail-out started in earnest in the new year. The directors made the first move, confidently requesting a loan of £1.5 million from the government, with the ability to restart dividends when half of this had been repaid. Parliament was having none of this, and proposed instead a smaller loan, much tighter caps on dividends, and all financial relief being conditional that 'at the same time due care be taken to secure by proper Regulation the future good government of the Company's affairs'.[23]

In May, Burgoyne wound up his investigations, and presented his final report. This concluded that Clive had acquired his Plassey fortune illegally. Burgoyne was supported on the floor of the house by his committee members, including William Meredith who tore into the Company's tyranny in Bengal. 'Never did such a system exist', he thundered, 'where mercantile avarice was the only principle and force the only means of carrying on government.' In full flow, Meredith cast aside the Company's attempt to win sympathy by focusing attention at the loss of life in the 'black hole' affair, declaring: 'I remember a similar accident in St. Martin's round-house'![24] Speaking to the Commons in May 1773, Burgoyne declared that 'it is the duty of the house, as guardians of the nation's honour to apply a remedy', arguing that 'our vindictive justice must go back to the origin of the evil' – in other words, to the revolution of 1757.[25] Burgoyne isolated Clive as the 'oldest, if not principal delinquent', who had set 'an evil example' to the rest of the Company's executives. Outside Parliament, Burgoyne's invective was matched by magazines and handbills full of caricatures condemning Clive for corruption: in one he recoils in horror from the ghosts of three Indian merchants who have come to demand justice. On 21 May, Burgoyne submitted his resolution to a vote: that all territorial conquests belonged to the Crown; that it was illegal for individuals to appropriate such public property for themselves; and that Clive had indeed done so. But the motion was rendered harmless through a set of amendments by Clive's allies, passed and then immediately followed by another motion praising Clive's 'great and meritorious service'. In a debate that had lasted from three o'clock in the afternoon until five o'clock the following morning, Clive had eventually escaped censure. But his reputation was broken, and he would die 18 months later in mysterious circumstances. Many believed he had committed suicide, with Dr Johnson observing that Clive had 'acquired his fortune by

such crimes that his consciousness of them impelled him to cut his own throat'.[26]

Attention turned to the Company itself. North had decided not to push the constitutional argument about who owned Bengal, and also shied away from touching the Company's monopoly, realising that this was the prime mechanism for returning Indian tribute to Britain. Instead of fundamental reform, North guided through three acts to relieve the Company's financial distress and reform its practices. The first set out the terms and conditions for the government's loan of £1.4 million, notably a 6 per cent cap on dividends until the debt was cleared. In return, the Company had to swallow the second of North's pieces of legislation, the Regulating Act of 1773. This amounted to a serious intrusion into the Company's corporate independence both at home and abroad. The Company's democratic system of governance had been regarded by many as a major cause of its slide into chaos. To counter this, the Regulating Act sharply curbed shareholder rights. The threshold for voting at Company meetings was raised from £500 to £1,000. At the time of the Act, the Company had 2,153 shareholders, 1,246 of whom possessed between £500 and £1,000 worth of stock. These were all disenfranchised at a stroke. In addition, those with £3,000 got two votes, those with £6,000 three votes, and the plutocrats with £10,000 received four votes. Naively, North had hoped that cutting the numbers of active shareholders would dampen disorder and 'integrity of conduct would follow greater property'.[27] If anything the measures magnified the problems of 'cabal and corruption' by making it easier for a few rich nabobs returning from India to take over the Company. Shareholder control over the Court of Directors was curbed as well. Annual elections for the entire board were replaced with staggered ballots for a quarter of the 24 directorships each year. The aim was to give the Company's leadership a more permanent flavour, but it also cut the directors' responsiveness to their owners, without introducing accountability through other measures. Parliament also cracked down on the corrupt system of ship chartering, in which many of the leading owners of the Company's ships were major holders of the Company's stock using this position to push freight costs perhaps a third higher than necessary. The Company's Surveyor of Shipping, Gabriel Snodgrass, admitted to Parliament that 'from the great Numbers, Opulence and various interests of the Owners of Shipping, due economy was prevented'.[28] New rules were introduced to reduce the Company's

tonnage, forcing many commanders into early retirement, and in the 1773/4 season, only 16 ships were stationed in the East.

Crucially, the Company's freedom to manage its own affairs in India was curtailed. A new post of Governor-General of India was introduced, based in Calcutta and supreme over the Company's other presidencies of Bombay and Madras. The post had an impressive annual £25,000 salary – not far from what Clive had earned in a year from his exclusive Society of Trade. Awarded to the Company's existing Governor of Bengal, Warren Hastings, this new post of overlord would be part of a five-person council, three of whose members were nominated by Parliament. Crucially, this gave the state a theoretical majority over decision-making in the Company's most important subsidiary. It also laid the seeds for constant in-fighting between Parliamentary appointees and the Company's men. In addition, a Supreme Court was introduced to Bengal, with the aim of dispensing justice to British subjects living there, but with highly ill-defined powers. And the Company's privilege of commercial confidentiality was withdrawn, with the Act providing the government with the right of access to all incoming correspondence with India; this intrusion was later extended to include the right to reject outgoing letters as well.

Finally, the Act made clear that 'any governor, or other officer who shall accept of any present … shall forfeit double the value, and be incapable ever after of serving the Company'. From Leadenhall Street, the Company protested that all these innovations amounted to the subversion of its charter, a precedent that could be applied elsewhere 'to destroy the independence of the City of London itself'. But it was simply in no position to block the changes. For the editor of *Gentleman's Magazine*, it was clear that the Regulating Act 'will in time (and perhaps not very far removed) be the means of transferring the wealth and power of the greatest trading company in the world into the hands of government. *Sic transit gloria mundi*.'[29]

THAT WORST OF PLAGUES, THE DETESTED TEA[30]

But the Company's troubles were not yet over. Lord North's third piece of legislation was the Tea Act. Historians are now agreed that 'no bill of such momentous consequences has ever received less attention upon passage in Parliament'.[31] Bengal's pre-eminence in the Company's accounts can sometimes mask the growing importance of China tea. At the beginning of the eighteenth century, imports of this new beverage amounted to just 100,000 lb, accounting for

a mere 1 per cent of the Company's trade. But this had surged to 2.5 million lb in the late 1740s, reaching over 4 million lb each year from 1760 to 1767. By this time, the Company was paying on average a shilling for each pound in Canton for tea that would later fetch more than four times as much at auction in London. In spite of freight costs and the high levels of duty the government imposed, tea was easily the Company's most profitable commodity. Mixed with slave-grown sugar from the West Indies, the afternoon cup of tea perfectly expressed Britain's emerging empire of consumption.

Like the textile trade, a large source of the Company's demand for tea came from outside the British market, notably in the Americas. As the Company's charter only extended to imports from Asia, merchants would buy tea at its quarterly auctions for re-export across the Atlantic. By 1760, America was consuming over a million pounds a year. Only a quarter of this came directly from England, however, with the rest smuggled in to avoid Britain's high tax regime. In the aftermath of the Seven Years' War, this important trade became embroiled in a new struggle, as the British Crown sought to export its powers of taxation to its American colonies. Just as the state's first raid on the Company's coffers had been driven by post-war financial necessity, so the extension of Britain's existing system of stamp duty in 1765 to America was justified by the imperative of sharing the cost of military spending with the colonists. The response was rapid and furious, with American opponents to the measure denying that Parliament had the constitutional authority to tax the colonies, and boycotts and riots forcing its prompt removal only a year later.

All this time, the Company was lobbying hard to find ways to boost its legitimate trade with the Americas. As part of its first deal with the government in 1767 to share the revenues of Bengal, it also won a five-year drawback on all of the customs duties on tea re-exported to America. Without the taxes, the price of tea was now equivalent to that paid by the smugglers in Amsterdam, and legal imports into America surged by 42 per cent into New York and 100 per cent in Philadelphia over the next 18 months. But what the government gave with one hand, it took away with the other. Simultaneous with the introduction of the duty drawback, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, Charles Townsend, introduced a revenue act imposing duties on imports of glass, lead, paper and tea into the Americas. Instead of collecting duty on tea in England, Townsend had simply transferred the tax across the Atlantic, negating the benefits the Company had just received.

Worse, tea became the focus of the colonists' opposition to the entire Townsend package. A strong anti-tea campaign arose along the eastern seaboard, with activists promoting Labradore tea from the red-root bush as an alternative. Many pledged to abstain totally from tea until the duties were removed. Legal imports of the Company's tea plummeted from a record 869,000 lb in 1768 to just 108,000 lb in 1770. When British merchants complained to the government of the disastrous effects this was having on trade, the government had second thoughts, removing all of the Townsend duties in 1770. But in spite of the Company's best efforts, Lord North kept the duty on tea. Only 1,000 lb of tea was exported to New York and Philadelphia between 1771 and 1773.

For the Company, the damage was done. Fusing with the share price crash of 1769 and mounting mismanagement in Bengal, the colonists' boycott left 18,000,000 lb of unsold tea sitting in its London warehouses. So, as part of its petition to Parliament, the Company's directors requested the right to export its tea surplus across the Atlantic. In a tactically brilliant move, the resulting Tea Act enabled the Company to sell its tea direct to America. In addition, the Act gave the Company a sizeable tax break by removing the duty paid on tea imported into England. Cutting out the middlemen and reducing the tax take would bring costs down dramatically so that Company tea could be sold cheaper than its smuggled rival. The British government thought that lower prices would allow the Americans to accept the continuing presence of the modest Townsend duty on tea. A handful of MPs protested that the government's plan would fall foul of the continuing resentment of the Townsend duty on tea. But the government stood firm. As a result, in the summer of 1773, the Company drew up plans to ship 2,000 chests of tea to four key ports – Boston, Charleston, New York and Philadelphia.

Lord North had made a strategic miscalculation. The boycott of tea had started to fizzle out in the Americas when the bulk of the Townsend duties were lifted. The Tea Act revived the campaign, and gave it a new edge – opposing corporate domination as well as unjust taxes. The patriots were also substantially aided by English merchants who had seen their business ruined by the new privileges won by the Company. According to one eye-witness, 'opposers of the measure in England wrote therefore to America, encouraging a strenuous resistance'.[32] From October onwards, newspapers and handbills provided the citizens of the 13 colonies with a barrage of analysis and polemic. The *Boston Evening Post* of 18 October

1773, for example, contained a powerful article from 'Reclusus' exposing the folly of Lord North's plan. 'Though the first Teas may be sold at a low rate to make a popular entry', he acknowledged, 'yet when this mode of receiving Tea is well-established, they, as all other Monopolists do, will meditate a greater profit on their Goods, and set them up at what price they please.'[33] Knowledge of the Company's malpractice in India provided another powerful reason for stopping it gaining a foothold in America. Writing in *The Alarm* newsletter, 'Rusticus' underlined how 'their Conduct in Asia, for some years past, has given simple Proof, how little they regard the Laws of Nations, the Rights, Liberties, or Lives of Men'. Clive's conquest of Bengal and the ensuing famine were all grist to the mill: 'They have levied War, excited Rebellions, dethroned lawful Princes, and sacrificed Millions for the Sake of Gain,' continued 'Rusticus', adding: 'fifteen hundred Thousands, it is said, perished by Famine in one Year, not because the Earth denied its fruits, but [because] this Company and their servants engulfed all the Necessaries of Life, and set them at so high a Rate that the poor could not purchase them'.[34]

Threats of tarring and feathering against the merchants who would handle the tea had the desired effect, and in New York and Philadelphia they wrote to the Company resigning their commission. But in Boston, three ships docked and refused to turn around. And so, on the night of 16 December 1773, patriots dressed as Mohawks dumped 90,000 lb of tea worth £9,659 into Boston harbour. The port of Boston was summarily closed by the British authorities until its citizens reimbursed the Company for its goods. The payment never came, of course, and the Boston Tea Party led inexorably to open rebellion at Lexington in April 1775. A Company that had engineered its own revolution in Bengal had unwittingly contributed to fomenting another revolution in the Americas. Looking back from the early years of the twenty-first century, Jane Anne Morris sees powerful resonance in this symbolic act of anti-corporate protest: 'The people who founded this nation didn't fight a war so that they could have a couple of "citizen representatives" sitting in on meetings of the British East India Company', she wrote in 2001. 'They carried out a revolution in order to be free of oppression: corporate, governmental, or otherwise.'[35]

RAFAEL'S REVENGE

The upsurge of revulsion against the Company was almost over. But there was one final act of reckoning still to come. When William

Bolts had published his *Considerations on Indian Affairs* in early 1772, one of his greatest grievances was the failure to bring the Company's miscreants to justice. 'We behold the impotency of power to be such on this side of the ocean', he wrote, 'that not one delinquent in India is brought to justice in Europe.'[36] Bolts wrote from personal experience, feeling himself unjustly expelled from Bengal by a compromised judicial system riddled with conflicts of interest. Not content with getting rid of Bolts, the Company also broke up his joint ventures with a number of prosperous Armenian merchants. In a series of co-ordinated strikes, Clive's successor as Governor, Harry Verelst, summarily arrested Gregore Cojamaul and Melcomb Philip at Varanasi in March 1768, and a few days later imprisoned Johannes Padre Rafael and Wuscan Estephan in Faizabad. All four were eventually transferred to Murshidabad, and after more than five months in jail, were released without charge or explanation. When they regained their freedom, they found the commercial situation turned upside down: all Armenian, English and Portuguese merchants were prohibited from operating in Bengal's internal markets.

In an extraordinary move, two of the four – Cojamaul and Rafael – decided to sail all the way to England to seek redress. The arrival of these two prosperous merchants gave substance to the widespread complaints against the Company in ways that Bolts's bitter critique never could. But they faced an uphill battle: first of all to convince the British courts that they had jurisdiction over the case, and then prove Verelst's guilt thousands of miles away from the scene of the crime. It was an epic struggle that took eight years to resolve. In September 1769, Cojamaul and Rafael petitioned the directors, complaining of the 'cruel and inhuman manner' in which they had been treated, and then bewailing Verelst's arbitrary edict, which had left them 'deprived of that freedom of trade which their nation had always enjoyed in the times of the worst of the ancient Nabobs'.[37] When this was brushed aside, the two commenced legal proceedings for damages against Verelst in July 1770. Thus began a long journey through the labyrinth of British law. But in December 1774, the case eventually came before a jury at the Guildhall in the City, who found Verelst guilty of 'false imprisonment' and ordered him to pay Rafael £5,000 plus costs. Outraged, Verelst demanded a retrial. But all he managed to do was delay the inevitable, and reduce the payment by £1,000. The courts also found in favour of Cojamaul, awarding him £3,200, and in July 1777, it was all settled with another £2,500 in damages for Wuscan Estephan. In all, Verelst

had to pay £9,700 – the equivalent to nearly £1 million in today's money – plus the Armenians' and his own extensive legal costs.[38] It is a testimony to the British legal system that successive judges and juries were willing to put nationality aside and find Verelst guilty of 'oppression, false imprisonment and singular depredations'.[39] Verelst's career as an opulent Company director was cut short, and he would end his days in exile from his creditors.[40]

Thousands of miles away from the scene of the crime, the principle of extraterritorial liability for corporate malpractice had been established in 1770s London. Many in business regard the current upsurge of global litigation against corporations as somehow new and unjustified. Yet, Verelst's case provides a powerful precedent, demonstrating that 200 years ago one of the senior executives of the world's first multinational was tried and found guilty of what we would now consider human rights abuses. The practical implications of this breakthrough were, however, muted. Few others had the means or the determination to come all the way to England for redress.

A MOMENTARY FIT OF GOOD CONDUCT

Adam Smith hated colonies almost as much as he despised corporations, viewing them as inherently wasteful for the coloniser and usually oppressive for the colonised. He lamented that no country had ever voluntarily given up a colony, owing to the sad fact that such 'sacrifices are always mortifying to the pride of every nation'.[41] For him, the outbreak of war in America represented a huge missed opportunity for constructing an enlightened Atlantic union based on open trade and representative government. Four months after *The Wealth of Nations* was published the 13 colonies issued the Declaration of Independence, and seven years of bitter warfare were to follow. By the time Smith was turning his attention to the third edition of his masterpiece in 1783, the American war was nearing its end. But after a 'momentary fit of good conduct' immediately following the Regulating Act, the East India Company was 'in greater distress than ever'.

In a celebrated case, George Pigot, Governor of Madras had died in captivity – not at the hands of the Sultan of Mysore, but as hostage of a gang of rebellious executives opposing his attempts to restore order in the South. Like Clive, Pigot was another example of 'poacher turned gamekeeper', returning to Madras, a decade after he had made a fortune of at least £300,000 in the Seven Years War

(worth around £32 million today). Pigot's task was to reverse the invasion of neighbouring Tanjore which had been undertaken to pay off the nawab of Arcot's British creditors, led by the engineer turned banker, Paul Benfield. When Pigot attempted to ban the use of Tanjore's revenues to repay Benfield and others, the majority on the Madras Council arrested Pigot and held him at St Thomas's Mount, where he died in May 1777 'from mental stress and the rigours of the confinement'. The rebellious executives were eventually tried back in England for imprisoning and deposing Pigot, but not for manslaughter or murder, winning their liberty at the cost of a £1,000 fine. This internal corruption was followed by catastrophic defeat at the hands of Haider Ali in 1780 at the battle of Pollilur, and the arrival of a French expeditionary force the following year as part of a global anti-British alliance. The scale of the conflict in the South almost bankrupted the Bengal treasury, which had appeared so opulent when Clive had acquired the *diwani* in 1765.

As his contribution to the resurgence of public and political interest into the Company's affairs, Smith wrote to his publisher, William Strahan, in May 1783, informing him that he planned to add a new section giving 'a full exposition of the Absurdity and hurtfulness of almost all our chartered trading companies'.[42] This counter-blast appeared in the final book of the new volume, dealing with 'the Public Works and Institutions which are necessary for facilitating particular Branches of Commerce'. In Smith's opinion, however, the joint stock corporation was a deeply flawed piece of public policy. A particular danger was the impetus for hazardous speculation created by the separation of ownership and management in the joint stock arrangement. By limiting the liability of shareholders to the nominal value of their investments, excessive risks would be taken. In the Company's case, investors were also drawn by the lure of patronage, acquiring 'a share, though not in the plunder, yet in the appointment of the plunderers of India'.[43] In parallel, corporate executives would never look after shareholder funds with the 'same anxious vigilance' that they would in a partnership where ownership and control were in the same hands. As a result, 'negligence and profusion must always prevail, more or less, in the management of the affairs of such a company'.[44] If this wasn't bad enough, the Company's monopoly status continued to extract an unjustified tax on both consumers and producers. Smith acknowledged that a temporary monopoly may well have been necessary in the early days of the India trade. But it had long ago outlived its usefulness, simply becoming a vehicle for the even more 'negligence, profusion

and malversation' by its executives.[45] Hoping for shareholders to act with 'more dignity and steadiness' was unlikely to yield results, he felt. Instead, Smith's prescription for these dire ailments was simple: recognise that the Company would never be 'fit to govern' its possessions in India and make the trade between Britain and India 'open to all'. More generally, Smith argued that joint stocks should be strictly limited to financial services (banking and insurance) and utilities (water and canals).

A STARK UTOPIA

Reading Smith afresh and delving into his analysis of the East India Company, it is shocking how his penetrating critique of the corporation has been so comprehensively suppressed. Nothing of his scepticism of corporations, their pursuit of monopoly and their faulty system of governance, enters the speeches of today's neo-liberal advocates. Promoting his vision of free trade, they conveniently ignore that this can only be achieved with steadfast curbs on corporate power. Smith may have been a believer in open markets, but freeing the world for corporations formed no part of his vision. Smith strongly approved of the prevailing restrictions on the establishment of joint stock corporations introduced in the 1721 Bubble Act, and it took almost another century after *The Wealth of Nations* for these constraints to be removed in Britain. Across the Atlantic, corporations would also play a highly limited role in the newly independent United States. With memories of the East India Company vivid in the public imagination, corporations were tightly circumscribed in the new republic, with time-bound charters that could be revoked for misconduct. Significantly, the writers of the US Constitution made no mention of corporations, suggesting the limited role that they expected them to play in the new Republic.[46] Future US President, Thomas Jefferson, in particular, worked tirelessly to resist concentrations of economic power, writing in 1816 that 'I hope we shall crush in its birth the aristocracy of our moneyed corporations which dare already to challenge our government in a trial of strength, and bid defiance to the laws of our country.' More recently, John Kenneth Galbraith has imagined that if Smith were to come back to earth, 'he would be appalled at a world, where, as in the United States, a thousand corporations dominate the industrial, commercial and financial landscape and are controlled by their hired management'.[47]

Smith was a penetrating analyst of the causes and consequences of corporate over-stretch. But his enlightenment faith in the 'invisible hand' blinded him to the ways in which the rule of the market would itself create injustice and instability. Not only did Smith's vision ignore the problem of what modern economists today describe as 'externalities' – the tendency of the market to deplete public goods – but his belief in the providential outcomes of the market obscured its tendency to boom and bust. In spite of his trenchant criticism of the commercial character, Smith saw no reason to temper market freedoms. As the Industrial Revolution unfolded, the 'moral sentiments' that Smith hoped would curb relentless self-interest proved to be wholly inadequate to the task of preventing shocking abuse in the workplace or the ruthless exploitation of the environment. As Karl Polanyi observed following the collapse of the liberal world order in the 1930s, Smith's self-regulating market is a 'stark utopia', which could not exist 'for any length of time without annihilating the human and natural substance of society'.[48]

Adam Smith died in July 1790, too early to see how some of his ideas would be used to justify the progressive elimination of the East India Company's trading monopoly. Rather than ushering in an era of liberty and justice, the result was colonial domination. British manufacturers were protected by high trade and tariff barriers, and the entire Indian economy progressively skewed to service the imperial interest. Smith's vindication of commercial freedom would also be used to justify often inhumane imperial policies, particularly on famine relief. In *The Wealth of Nations*, Smith had confidently stated that 'a famine has never arisen from any other cause but the violence of government attempting, by improper means, to remedy the inconveniences of a dearth'.[49] This conclusion was supported by his understanding of the terrible Bengal Famine of 1770, when 'some improper regulations, some injudicious restraints imposed by the servants of the East India Company upon the rice trade, contributed, perhaps to turn that dearth into a famine'.[50] There is a world of difference, however, between the ways that corporations manipulate the market for their own ends and the interventions that states need to make to ensure the protection of human rights, the most important of which is the right to life. Nevertheless, Smith's call for government non-intervention in times of famine would be applied with cruel effect by the British in India. As early as 1783, some of the Company's own officials would protest against attempts to offer food relief, using Smith's writings as ammunition. This was a position later strongly supported by the East India Company's own

resident political economist, Thomas Malthus, who taught at the Company's College at Haileybury. Famine tested Smith's benevolent market and found it wanting, unable to respond to the imperative of ultimate human need.

For the modern corporation – and the East India Company in particular – Adam Smith remains one of the most powerful enquirers into its flawed metabolism. What his world-view lacked was sufficient attention to how the 'laws of justice' could be made to work in an anarchic global marketplace. This would be the obsession of Smith's friend, Edmund Burke.

7
Justice Will be Done

THE TREES OF DESTRUCTION

Due south of Fort William in central Kolkata lies Alipur, a lush suburb that still abounds with exclusive clubs and grand mansions from the colonial era. One of the most striking of these is Belvedere House, now home to the National Library of India. Originally a summer house for the Nawab of Bengal, the site was gifted to Warren Hastings by Mir Jafar in 1763. And it was here that two of the Company's most senior executives met at dawn on 17 August 1780 to fight one of the most extraordinary boardroom battles in corporate history – a duel to the death.

On one side stood Warren Hastings, Governor-General of Bengal, and an archetypal Company man. Hastings had joined the firm in 1749 at the age of 17 and had decades of experience in India. He had been a prisoner of Siraj-ud-Daula in the build-up to Plassey, and had risen through the ranks on the basis of his evident skill and dedication. Against a backdrop of the generalised plunder in Bengal, Hastings developed a reputation for personal integrity. He was one of the very few who had tried to halt the anarchy of private trade in the 1760s, seeking a more ethical basis for British commerce. 'If our people, instead of erecting themselves into lords and oppressors of the country, confine themselves to an honest and fair trade,' he told Parliament, 'they will everywhere be respected, and the English name, instead of becoming a reproach, will be universally revered.'[1] By 1780, Hastings had been directing the Company's affairs in Bengal for eight years, juggling competing demands of trade, finance, justice and defence, often letting pragmatism trump principle. In the process, he had become embroiled in endless disputes with the Parliamentary majority on the new Bengal Council.

Opposing him was Philip Francis, the ring-leader on the Council. Perhaps the finest propagandist of his day, Francis is now known to have been the author of the anonymous 'Junius' letters, whose powerful critique rocked the corrupt government of George III between 1768 and 1771. Prior to his appointment as councillor in 1773, Francis had had a fairly unexceptional career as a junior

official in the War Office. The only plausible explanation for his surprise elevation to the Bengal Council with its impressive salary of £10,000 a year was an attempt by the embattled establishment to get 'Junius' out of the country. And by sending him to Bengal, there was the added prospect that he would not come back, succumbing to disease like so many of the Company's employees. Central to Francis's identity was the need for eternal resistance to tyranny, and he quickly turned his attention from the corruption of the British court to the mismanagement of the Company. In November 1774, just one month after his arrival in Bengal, Francis was writing back to his friend John Bourke, 'the corruption is no longer confined to the stem of the tree, or to a few principal branches; every twig, every leaf is putrified'.[2]

Both of the duellists felt right was on their side. Hastings believed that Francis's constant criticisms of his policies had reached an intolerable level, challenging his authority as governor. By contrast, Francis saw Hastings as the incarnation of the Company's institutionalised corruption. But if Hastings's faults lay in his tendency to authoritarian high-handedness, Francis was crippled by his sense of superiority, mistaking vindictiveness for public virtue. Even his friends warned him of his 'reputation for haughtiness', and in Calcutta he quickly became known as 'King Francis'. After almost six years of non-stop squabbling, Hastings forced the issue on 14 August 1780, impugning his rival's character and declaring him 'void of truth and honour'. Francis had no option but to challenge Hastings to a duel. The long-running battle between principle and expedience had finally come to a head. Three days later, between 5.30 and 6.00 a.m., the two met on the western edge of the Belvedere under a clump of trees known as the 'trees of destruction'. Neither had fought a duel before, and Francis had probably never used a pistol. The two stood 14 paces apart, and after initial distractions, Francis fired and missed. Seconds later, Hastings shot, hitting Francis in the shoulder. Francis fell and cried out that he was a dead man, prompting Hastings to shout 'Good God! I hope not.' Thankfully, the wound was not life-threatening. But it did put an end to Francis's feud with Hastings, and he returned to England a year later a bitter man, vowing revenge.

The Belvedere duel was more than just an exotic skirmish between two irreconcilable individuals. It epitomised the deep-seated battle for control of the Company that was now under way – between the long-standing commercial imperatives of a joint stock corporation, and the rising interests of the British imperial state. For all to see,

it exposed the utter failure of North's Regulating Act to allocate effective responsibility and so bring tranquillity to the Company's operations. Over the next 15 years, a new bargain would be struck between state and corporation, constraining and channelling the Company's power and autonomy in unprecedented ways. Running through this struggle, however, was the continuation of the ethical passion that had driven the first inquiries into the Company in the 1770s. Ultimately, the question that Edmund Burke would put before the world in his dramatic impeachment of Hastings was: can the Company and its executives be brought to justice?

SEND MORE MONEY

When Hastings took over as Governor of Bengal in 1772, his primary concern was to restore order and return the Company's operations to profitability. Corruption and spiralling military expenditure had turned the *diwani* windfall into a liability. Revenue from land taxation formed the lion's share of the *diwani*, and Hastings moved quickly to end the mirage of Clive's 'dual system' by moving the treasury from Murshidabad to Calcutta. To maximise revenues, Hastings first farmed out the task of revenue collection for a five-year period and then replaced this with a series of annual auctions. Initially, Hastings' commercialisation of the tax system paid dividends, with revenues rising almost 20 per cent between 1772 and 1776.[3] But thereafter collection tailed off once more, and cases of oppressive tax collection mounted.

In the wider economy, Hastings rigorously enforced the long-standing ban on private trade. Learning the lessons of Clive's failed Society of Trade, Hastings decided to establish corporate rather than private monopolies over opium, salt and saltpetre as a way of further increasing revenues. In the case of opium, Hastings argued that such a 'pernicious article of luxury' should be carefully regulated and only permitted 'for the purpose of foreign commerce'. So, in 1773, Hastings deprived the Company's Council in Patna of its opium privileges. In its place, the Company was given the exclusive rights to buy all opium, a function that Hastings farmed out to contractors to manage on its behalf. 'All types of compulsion and coercion were used', writes Chandra Prakash Sinha, 'to force the *ryots* [peasants] to grow opium against their will, for which they received arbitrarily low prices.'[4] Before the Company took over, opium was selling for about three rupees a *seer*. Peasants were compelled to sell their poppy to the contractor, and the

price they received soon fell to between one and two rupees. The average auction price, however, was six rupees a *seer*, winning the Company a substantial profit. When Francis complained that the monopoly was producing 'universal poverty and depopulation' in Bihar, Hastings handed the opium contract to Francis's friend, John Mackenzie, thereby silencing the criticism. But Mackenzie's tenure was no better, and in 1777 a group of peasants complained that a large area of corn had been forcibly cut down and replaced with opium.[5]

Hastings introduced a similar approach for salt, imposing a Company monopoly and then farming out the actual production to contractors. But mismanagement actually reduced the Company's revenues, and so in 1780 Hastings introduced a system of direct Company management. All salt had to be sold to Company agents at a fixed price, and the agents then sold it on to wholesalers. By keeping the price it paid the producers as low as possible and the wholesale price high, the Company raised its revenues to nearly Rs3 million in the first year alone, taking this total to over Rs6 million by 1784.[6] The system would remain almost unchanged until the end of British rule in 1947.

A final source of cash for Hastings to satisfy the Company's directors was to look outside Bengal, using the Company's private army as leverage. One of his first acts was to cancel the annual tribute of Rs2.6 million to the Mughal emperor. This was followed by a series of deals with Bengal's western neighbour, Awadh. First, Hastings transferred the provinces of Allahabad and Kora to Awadh for a tidy Rs5 million, and then he hired out the Company's soldiers for a further Rs50 million to help Awadh annex Rohilkhand. All in all, Hastings had gained a much-needed £5.5 million from territory-swapping and mercenary exchanges. In 1775, Hastings took control of Varanasi (Benares) – 'a valuable acquisition to the Company', he wrote back to the directors – worth another quarter of a million pounds a year. When hostilities with France broke out in 1778 as part of the wider American War of Independence, Hastings exerted further pressure on Varanasi to squeeze out a series of extra payments.

Hastings's relentless drive for cash had dramatic human consequences, many of which were presented at his impeachment. He was by no means a cruel ruler, but he was faced by a profound dilemma, beautifully laid out by Macaulay in his 1840 essay. In essence, the Company's directors wanted Hastings to simultaneously enhance Bengal's financial performance and improve its ethical

standards. 'Govern leniently and send more money', the directors urged, according to Macaulay, adding 'practice strict justice and moderation towards neighbouring powers, and send more money'.[7] Ever the practical administrator, Hastings recognised that 'it was absolutely necessary for him to disregard either the moral discourses or the pecuniary requisitions of his employers'. He chose the safest course and decided 'to neglect the sermons and to find the rupees'.[8]

FUNDAMENTAL INJUSTICE

Hastings's financial management had an air of desperation about it. What added to the stress was the dramatic change in governance brought about by the Regulating Act, all of which came to a head at the Belvedere. Traditionally, the Company's governor of each presidency had supreme powers, guided by a largely consensual council. The new Act overturned this tradition, introducing a five-person council, making decisions by majority vote. Furthermore, three of the councillors were appointed by Parliament, ostensibly to represent the public interest. Almost as soon as these three parliamentary appointees – General John Clavering, Philip Francis and George Monson – arrived in Calcutta in October 1774, tensions arose. Instead of the 21-gun salute they were expecting, Hastings had organised only 17 cannon to fire as they landed. Furthermore, Hastings had not bothered to greet them in person, and when he did meet them later in the day, he did so without the expected formality. 'Surely, Mr Hastings might have put on a ruffled shirt', wrote Alexander Macrabie, secretary to the new councillor Philip Francis. Beneath these seemingly trivial questions of protocol lay a monumental struggle for control of the Company in Bengal.

From the start, Francis along with Clavering and Monson sought to overthrow Hastings, believing him to be irretrievably corrupt, even stooping to bribe the new councillors to cease their inquiries. The first major clash came in 1775, when Francis, Clavering and Monson backed the accusations of corruption being levelled at Hastings by Rajah Nandakumar. A former Governor of Hugli under the Nawabs, Nandakumar was the most powerful local aristocrat in 1770s Bengal, and a confirmed enemy of Hastings. The Francis faction had, however, underestimated Hastings's capacity for self-preservation. Resurrecting a fraud case against Nandakumar made many years earlier, Hastings brought Nandakumar to trial at the new Supreme Court, where in accordance with English law, Hastings's ally Elijah Impey found him guilty and sentenced him to death. As

Hastings's recent biographer, Jeremy Bernstein, concluded, there is 'no question that the execution of Nandakumar was a judicial murder'.[9] Beyond the savagery of the act itself lay the unfortunate comparison with Clive's infamous forgery of the treaty with Amir Chand back in 1757: Clive was ennobled and applauded for a crime that would hang Nandakumar.

Initially cowed, the parliamentary faction next tried to dislodge Hastings in June 1777 when news reached Calcutta that Hastings's agent in London had tendered his resignation. Clavering promptly declared himself the new Governor-General. Hastings stood firm, denying he had resigned and mobilising the Supreme Court, which, again, took his side. Hastings had triumphed, and Clavering's death soon afterwards left Francis isolated. Almost in despair, Francis wrote to the Prime Minister, Lord North, in September 1777, damning the Company's rule in Bengal as guilty of 'injustice in its fundamental principle', 'uniting the character of Sovereign and merchant, and exercising the power of the first for the benefit of the second'. For Francis, the only solution was to make sure that 'the government is not to be continued in the hands of a mercantile body'.[10] In the Bengal Council, Francis was in the minority, and finding his position severely weakened, he came to a truce with Hastings when war loomed with the Marathas. But peace between these two irreconcilable characters could never last long, and the result was the climactic Belvedere duel in the summer of 1780.

With Francis's departure back to England, Hastings had *carte blanche* to run affairs as he wished. In March 1781, he awarded the opium contract at a knock-down price to Stephen Sulivan, son of the Company chairman and Hastings's patron, Laurence Sulivan. The younger Sulivan promptly sold it on to John Benn for Rs350,000 (£40,000), who then made a further Rs150,000 for himself by selling it on once more to William Young.[11] Having put in place what he saw as the best mechanism for generating profit from opium production, Hastings then probed the possibility for making extra opium sales in China. Hastings ordered two ships, the *Nonsuch* and the *Betsy*, to be loaded with 3,450 chests of opium and sent undercover to China. When the directors in London heard of the escapade, they were horrified, stating categorically to Hastings that it was 'beneath the Company to be engaged in such a clandestine trade; we therefore positively forbid any more opium being sent on the Company's account'.[12] Then in January 1782 Hastings turned on his former ally, Awadh, using the accession of a weak nawab to extort treasure said to be worth £2 million from the royal queens'

(*begums*') household. After imprisoning the queens for a year and allegedly torturing the court eunuchs, Hastings's troops slunk away with a mere £5,500.

Once more, the Company seemed to be embarking on a downward spiral of corruption, conflict and desolation. In 1769, it had been news that Haidar Ali, Sultan of Mysore, had attacked Madras that pricked the 'Bengal Bubble'. In July 1780, he invaded the Carnatic, smashing the Company's forces at Polilur. In Bengal, droughts struck in 1781 and 1782. And rebellion finally exploded against the extortions of the Company's system of land revenue. In June 1782, peasants from Dinajpur travelled to Calcutta with a petition against the oppressive behaviour of Debi Singh, the Company's agent in the region. The *ryot*s wanted relief from unpayable levels of tax, the removal of unauthorised levies and an end to the forcible sale of property to pay tax arrears, as well as redress for the violence of the Company's agents. But the Company rejected the complaint as 'frivolous' and 'fabricated'. By November, *ryot*s were refusing to pay their rents, and in January, full-scale revolt broke out in Dinajpur and Rangpur.[13] Peasant grievances merged with the holy war of the *sannyasin* led by Shah Munju and Shah Musa. This rebellion was, however, quickly suppressed by the Company's troops. But neighbouring Awadh also rose up in revolt against Hastings's mounting demands for tribute, which had resulted in those unable to pay being 'confined in open cages'. Again, the uprising was easily crushed, only to be followed by a vicious famine in 1784, thankfully not on the scale of the 1770 disaster.

Bankim Chandra Chattopadhyaya would later base his ground-breaking novel, *Anandamath*, on the story of *sannyasin* uprisings against the Company during Hastings's tenure. Central to the story of Mahatma Satya, Mahendra, Bhavan and Kalyani is the inclusion of the nationalist anthem, 'Bande Mataram' (Hail to the Mother) as the song of the rebels. What was striking about the novel was the emphasis that the main characters placed on armed rebellion as the only way to rid India of the British, a strategy that was later adopted by Bengal's revolutionary movement at the beginning of the twentieth century. In the novel, the radical Bhavan attempts to convince Mahendra of the need for revolt: 'the British are shipping our wealth to their treasuries in Calcutta', he says, 'and from there that wealth is to be shipped again to England. There is no hope for India until we drive the British out ... by sheer force of arms.'[14]

By the time Hastings left Calcutta in February 1785 to return home, peace had been restored with the Marathas, Hyder Ali was

dead and Madras regained. But back in England, his reputation had been shattered. William Cowper captured the mood in his 1782 poem, 'Expostulation'. A one-time school-mate of Hastings, Cowper turned on him in a highly personal rebuke:

> Hast thou, though suckled at fair freedom's breast,
> Exported slav'ry to the conquer'd East
> Pull'd down the tyrants India serv'd with dread,
> And rais'd thyself, a greater, in their stead?
> Gone thither arm'd and hungry, return'd full,
> Fed with the richest veins of the Mogul,
> A despot big with pow'r obtain'd by wealth
> And that obtain'd by rapine and by stealth?
> With Asiatic vices stor'd thy mind,
> But left their virtues and thine own behind;
> And, having truck'd thy soul, brought home the fee,
> To tempt the poor to sell himself to thee?[15]

NIBBLING AT THE CHARTER

After the crash of 1772, the overwhelming priority for the Company's directors back in London was to pay off the £1.4 million loan from the government and regain financial freedom. Their task was hampered by the rumours of civil war in the Bengal Council that filtered back to England. Scandalised by Nandakumar's judicial murder and the in-fighting it exposed in the Council, the directors had voted to recall Hastings in the summer of 1776, but they were overruled at a meeting of the Company's shareholders. However, Hastings's representative in London had used this occasion to tender Hastings's resignation in an attempt to secure good terms, which the directors accepted. Of course, when Hastings himself heard of his departure from office the following year, he refused to budge. This stubbornness enflamed passions in London even more, exposing the failure of the Regulating Act to give the state the right to recall the governor-general. King George III demanded that Hastings should be dismissed, and some talked of his impeachment. But war in the Americas took precedence and events in India were allowed to drift. In the meantime the Company successfully paid off its debt in 1776, cut its debt and triumphantly raised its dividend from 6 to 8 per cent.

When news of Haidar Ali's invasion of the Carnatic reached London in April 1781, this happy situation was quickly overturned. The Company was already in the middle of negotiations with Lord

North's embattled administration for a renewal of its charter, and this powerful reminder of the Company's incompetence strengthened the government's hand. North demanded that the Company should hand over three-quarters of its net profits over what was required to pay the annual 8 per cent dividend, amounting to £600,000 a year. Speaking for the opposition Whigs, Edmund Burke sprung to the Company's defence, arguing that this was no more than 'a violent and shameless attempt to rob the Company in order to pursue the purposes of the most lavish waste and the most profligate corruption'.[16] But the Company was desperate for its charter, and in return for another ten years' monopoly it agreed to pay £400,000 up front, as well as three-quarters of the surplus going forward.

This was not the end of the matter. In February, Burke had been appointed to a Parliamentary Select Committee investigating the administration of justice in Bengal. Two months later, Henry Dundas, the 39-year-old rising star of the Scottish elite, was charged with leading a parallel Secret Committee into the Carnatic affair. Just as in 1773, the Company was facing a two-pronged parliamentary assault. Over the next two years, these twin investigations would make 17 reports to Parliament, exposing the Company and laying the foundations for its subordination to the state. Although they were political adversaries, Burke and Dundas shared much of the same analysis concerning the roots of the problem. Where they differed was over which institution should have the whip-hand. For Dundas, the Crown should be in the driving seat, but for Burke, it was clear that the Company should be accountable to Parliament. What complicated matters even further was the mounting political instability at Westminster as the British establishment struggled to come to terms with the loss of the Americas. North finally fell in March 1782, and there followed three short-lived administrations before Pitt the Younger took office in December 1784, driving through Dundas's vision of reform.

For Dundas, the problem lay in the chronic inability of the Company to act any longer as a commercial concern and avoid the lure of military conquest. 'I wish every servant of the Company', he told Parliament, 'to consider that it is and ought to be the first aim of his life to prove himself a faithful steward of the Company, and that he has no right to fancy he is an Alexander or an Aurangzeb and prefer frantic military exploits to the trade and commerce of the country.'[17] To demonstrate Parliament's authority over the Company, Dundas sought to discipline all three of the Company's governors in India – Rumbold in Madras, Hornby in Bombay and

Hastings in Calcutta. Rumbold was renowned for corruption, which many blamed for the failure of Madras to withstand Hyder Ali's assaults. Rumbold had famously bought the seat of Shaftesbury at the 1774 elections at 20 guineas a vote, and then returned to India as Governor of Madras, where between 1778 and 1780, he was alleged to have diverted £600,000 into his own pockets.

But Hastings was the main prize, and, in May 1782, Dundas presented a resolution that he had 'acted in a manner repugnant to the honour and policy of this nation and thereby brought great calamities on India and great expense on the East India Company'. Parliament agreed and voted to recall Hastings. But the Company's shareholders vetoed the decision by 428 to 75, just as they had overturned the directors' recall order in 1776. For one leading shareholder, this was just another example of a 'settled design to nibble away the charter rights of the Company'.[18] Frustrated by the shareholders, in the following spring Dundas presented a fully fledged bill to force the Company's shareholders to respect 'the sense of parliament'. But nine days before, the short-lived Shelburne coalition that Dundas served had fallen. There followed the extraordinary nine-month government of Lord North and Charles James Fox, an alliance of inveterate enemies. For the East India Company, the parliamentary initiative passed from Dundas to Burke.

THIS CONTINUAL DRAIN

Born in Dublin in 1729, Edmund Burke is widely seen as the father of modern conservatism for his passionate defence of the *ancien* régime during the French Revolution. His *Reflections on the Revolution in France* quickly became the handbook of reactionaries across Europe in their battle for the 'rights of property' against the 'rights of man'. Yet Burke was by no means a natural supporter of unchecked monarchical power. Indeed, for much of his political career with the Whigs, Burke sought to check tyranny and uphold the balance of powers between Crown and Parliament that had been achieved at the Glorious Revolution. In 1779–80, for example, he launched a campaign for 'economical reform', seeking to curb the corrupt use of public money by the royal court. Burke also took a resolutely pro-American line in Britain's struggles with the 13 colonies, and backed religious toleration for Catholics in his native Ireland. His stance towards the East India Company was also consistent with his philosophy of respect and duty. As long as the Company could demonstrate that it had fulfilled the terms of its

charter, Burke would support its independence. But as soon as he had concluded that it had become a tool of oppression, he would press for root-and-branch remedies.

Initially, Burke had opposed the efforts taken by Lord North to regulate the Company, seeing these as unjustified infringements of the Company's chartered status. This hostility to North's policies towards the Company also chimed with the political expediency of the opposition Whigs. But this all changed with the fall of North in 1782. Burke's own position was also shifting as the conclusions of his intensive Indian investigations became clear. In the south, leading Company executives in Madras had abused their position to make a series of private loans to local rulers, notably the Nawab of Arcot, engineering the invasion of Tanjore to secure repayment. Burke's close friend and kinsman, William Burke, had become the agent for the Rajah of Tanjore in 1778, and the two Burkes collaborated in a 1779 pamphlet revealing the scandal of these odious debts, amounting to more than £3 million. In the east, Burke's knowledge of Bengal had been enhanced by a close collaboration with Philip Francis on his return from Calcutta. These two streams came together in the summer of 1783 with the publication of the Select Committee's Ninth Report, a masterpiece of political economy, largely authored by Burke.

The reason why the Regulating Act had so catastrophically failed, according to Burke, was its inability to 'follow the Tracks of the Abuse' and apply 'an appropriate Remedy to a particular Distemper'.[19] The Bengal Revolution had broken 'the commercial circle', which had ensured that trade between Britain and India had brought mutual benefit. Using his words with precision, Burke described this model of exchange as 'Intercourse – for it is not Commerce', with India suffering 'what is tantamount to an Annual Plunder of its Manufactures and its Produce to the Value of Twelve hundred thousand Pounds'. In effect, India was being screwed.

Not only was Burke indignant at the way in which the Company's revolution had harmed the traditional rights of Indian traders and producers, but he also revealed how it had failed in providing any long-term benefit for the corporation either. A business model that rested on such unequal exchange inevitably reduced the productive capacity of Bengal, requiring increasingly 'casual and extraordinary' measures to extract financial resources. And on the expenditure side, the Company's involvement in 'an endless Chain of Wars' substantially increased the amount that Hastings needed to raise through trade and taxation. In December 1780, Hastings was

confidentially telling the directors that the gap was too great and there would have to be a 'total Suspension of their Investment' in the year ahead. The Company's commercial system lay in ruins. The only way it could send back any goods for sale at the Company's quarterly auctions was to let out space on its East Indiamen to its own executives, who purchased Bengal goods on their own account. This was a trading mirage, with no hope of any profit for the Company once costs were deducted.

> By this extraordinary scheme, [Burke wrote] the Company is totally overturned, and all its Relations inverted. From being a body concerned in Trade on their own account, and employing their Servants as Factors, the Servants have at One Stroke taken the whole Trade into their own Hands, on their own Capital, at their own Risque; and the Company are become Agents and Factors to them, to sell by Commission *their* Goods for *their* Profit.[20]

The only solution to this crisis was to re-establish the Company on 'a Bottom truly Commercial',[21] ending the pretence that it could undertake public responsibilities with any form of justice. More than this, the Company's systems of governance needed fundamental restructuring, going beyond the temporary palliatives of the Regulating Act. Rather than acting as any restraint on executive misconduct in Bengal, 'the Negligence of the Court of Directors has kept pace with, and must naturally have quickened, the Growth of the Practices which they have condemned'.[22] With the formation of the Fox–North coalition, Burke had an opportunity to put his conclusions into practice. Here, his hand was considerably strengthened by the parlous state of the Company's finances. In March 1783, the directors had sent a grovelling petition to Parliament begging for 'relief and effectual aid' from the state, and by the autumn, it was clear that the Company could no longer honour its debts.

The Company had become financially and institutionally bankrupt, breaching the implicit terms of its Georgian 'licence to operate'. Drawing from the rich Whig tradition of legitimate resistance to tyrannical government, Charles James Fox argued that corporations, like kings, owed duties to the people. The Company's charter was not to be seen as a sacrosanct grant of rights, but rather as an expression of a mutual trust between company and people. 'If this trust be abused', argued Fox, and 'its failure arises from

palpable guilt, ignorance or mismanagement, will any man say that trust should not be returned and delivered to other hands?' Burke took up the same theme, arguing that 'every description of commercial privilege [is] all in the strictest sense a trust, and it is of the very essence of every trust to be rendered accountable'.[23] Burke continued with a rhetorical flourish: 'to whom then would I make the East India Company accountable?', he mused. 'Why, to Parliament, to be sure.' The East India Bill framed by Fox aimed to enforce this accountability by replacing the Court of Directors with a body of seven commissioners appointed by parliament. In effect, the Company would be decapitated, its shareholders remaining as nominal owners, but disenfranchised of any voice in the management of their assets. It is said that when Sir William James, one of the Company's oldest directors, read the bill, he died of shock. The Company's shares also suffered, falling some 13 per cent on the news of the bill, reaching a lowly £120 at the end of November.

Proposing the India Bill before the Commons in December 1783, Burke was clear that 'the remedy is demanded of us by humanity, by justice and by every principle of true policy'. The broad-based sense of outrage against the Company in the Commons meant that sizeable majorities were quickly achieved. But the Company was not giving up easily, and counter-attacked with a propaganda assault that upheld the sanctity of its chartered privileges, warned the nation of the concentration of patronage that the bill would place in Fox's hands, and played on the King's deep personal hatred of Fox. To counter Fox's apparently unstoppable progress in Parliament, James Sayers produced a string of anti-Fox caricatures, the most successful of which was published on 5 December, depicting 'Carlo Khan's Triumphal Entry into Leadenhall Street'. Fox is shown as the 'Great Mogul', sitting astride an elephant which bears the face of the Prime Minister, Lord North. The elephant is led by Edmund Burke dressed as a herald with a map of Bengal hanging from his trumpet. Crucially, Fox carries a banner stating in Greek, 'King of Kings'. No longer a man of the people, Fox had become a tyrant. Reflecting on this dramatic turnaround, Lord North later admitted that 'the idle nonsense about Carlo Khan had misled the weak part of the country so strangely'.[24]

This shift in public mood provided a cloak for King George to strike at the coalition. The King despised Fox for meddling in his household affairs and saw the India Bill as a perfect opportunity to rid himself of a government he resented. In a move that breached the constitutional principle that the King should not interfere in the

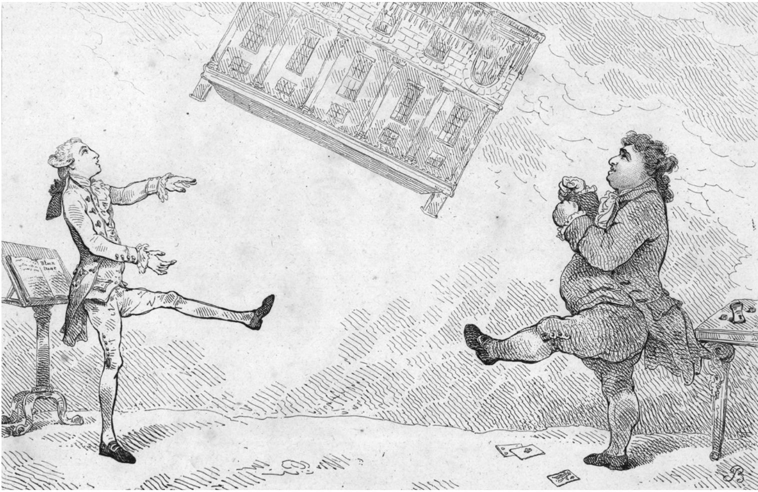


Illustration 7.1 Thomas Rowlandson, *Billy Lackbeard and Charley Blackbeard playing at Football*, 1784

affairs of Parliament, George let it be known that any peer voting for the bill in the House of Lords would be regarded as his enemy. The ploy worked to perfection, and the bill was defeated. Refusing to budge, Fox and North were forced to relinquish their seals of office, just days after their apparent triumph in the Commons. William Pitt the Younger was made Prime Minister, and Burke would never again hold public office. In the game of 'political football' over the control of East India House, the inexperienced Pitt nicknamed by Rowlandson as 'Billy Lackbeard' had trumped the grizzled Fox, 'Charley Blackbeard'.

DIRECT AND CONTROL

In place of Burke's decapitation strategy, Pitt introduced a far more subtle plan for exerting state control over the Company. In March 1784, Parliament was dissolved, and a new one elected that was much more conducive to Pitt's cause. The Whigs were crushed, blaming their defeat on the extensive use of bribery by the Company's nabobs on Pitt's behalf.

Pitt's first priority was to stabilise the Company's finances. Bailiffs had entered East India House a few days after the election was called in March to claim the Company's properties in lieu of over £100,000 it owed to the government. New ways had to be found to

boost its trading revenues and restore the confidence of the financial markets. Just as in 1773, the government turned to tea. But in place of the disastrous Tea Act, which had retained an unjust tax, Pitt cut the hated taxation on tea from 119 to 12.5 per cent, replacing the initial loss of revenue with the peculiar Window Tax. It was a brilliant move, reducing the price of legal tea, putting many of the smugglers out of business, and driving up the Company's imports of tea from just 5 million lb in 1784 to 13 million lb the following year. Pitt then turned his attention to the markets. Once again, the Company was financially embarrassed, lacking the wherewithal to pay its dividend. In June 1784, the Company's chairman, Nathaniel Smith, pleaded to Parliament for temporary assistance, warning that another Europe-wide financial meltdown could take place if a bail-out was not forthcoming. If he had 'to go in to the Court of Proprietors and tell them they were to have no dividend', Smith told the Commons, he 'would not be answerable for the consequences. The news would soon reach Holland and the government need not be told what would follow.'[25] To avoid a run on the stock, Pitt pushed through legislation extending the Company's ability to raise debt, and so pay its regular dividend at 8 per cent. Of course, this measure made little financial sense as the Company was paying dividends out of debt. But it helped to stabilise the situation.

To crown his achievements, Pitt presented to the house his bill for the 'Better Regulation of the Government' of India on 6 July 1784. Drafted by his firm ally, Henry Dundas, the bill respected the 'sacred' character of the Company's charter. But a five-man Board of Control appointed by the King was established in Whitehall. The board was given full powers to 'superintend, direct and control' the civil and military affairs of the Company's territorial possessions. In addition, the proprietors' right to veto decisions taken by the directors was removed, and the Crown gained the power to recall any of the Company's executives in India, solving the problem that Hastings had posed for London throughout the previous decade. As one wise historian observed, 'it was a clever, dishonest bill, which successfully concealed the Ministry's intention of effectively subordinating the Court of Directors'.[26] Pitt had managed to take control because he understood that the Company's main concerns were pre-eminently financial and not political. By leaving the directors with the power of patronage and propping up the dividend, he successfully seduced the Company into the state's embrace. As one government official observed with some satisfaction after the Act had been passed, the directors had been reduced to 'mere clerks'.[27]

Edmund Burke was not one to call an end to his pursuit of justice simply because of a lost election. What depressed Burke most was his belief that 'all the tyranny, robbery and destruction of mankind practised by the Company and their servants in the East is popular and pleasing to the country'.[28] Indeed, even his closest friends were baffled at Burke's concern for the 'black primates' of India.[29] Burke was also fully aware of the futility of pursuing the cause of India in the face of Pitt's supremacy. His passion would first be directed at the scandal of the Nabob of Arcot's debts and then at Hastings' mismanagement of Bengal.

THE MOST INIQUITOUS COMBINATIONS OF FRAUD

Not surprisingly given the result of the 1784 election, Burke was incensed by the corrupting influence of East Indian money on the politics of England. Fox's original India bill had explicitly barred the mortgaging of land or revenues in India to British subjects, making any existing arrangements – such as the nawab of Arcot's debts – 'null and void'. Pitt's East India Act, by contrast, established a fund to pay off the Arcot debts that were 'justly due'. These amounted to some 6,985,570 star pagodas or £2,794,228, equivalent to £267 million in today's money. Annual payments of £480,000 were scheduled to redeem the debt, all overseen by the new Board of Control. In February 1785, Burke savaged 'the collusion of ministers with the corrupt interest of the delinquents in India', arguing that 'it will astonish posterity, when they read our opinions in our actions, that, after years of inquiry, we have found out that the sole grievance of India consisted in this, that the servants of the Company there had not profited enough of their opportunities, nor drained it sufficiently of its treasures.'[30] Burke's bitterness was directed personally at Benfield, describing him and the rest of the gang of creditors as 'those inexpugnable tape-worms which devour the nutriment and eat up the bowels of India'. But four hours of high-flown rhetoric failed to move Pitt and Dundas.

The imperial machine moved into action, and by 1804, it had paid out £3,658,432, liquidating the original registered debts along with sizeable interest payments. But a further £5.7 million in alleged debts held by both British and Indian creditors against the Nawab were still outstanding, and a panel of commissioners was established to sift through a plethora of claims. For Philip Francis, still pursuing corporate corruption decades after he had left India, 'the enormous amount of these supposed claims would lead one to conclude that

all the wealthy natives of Change-alley and Lombard-street had gone to India, for the benevolent purpose of lending their money to the princes of that country. I doubt it. I do not believe that a single shilling of real English money was ever lent to a nabob of the Carnatic. If anything was lent to them, it was out of their own property.'[31]

Over the next four decades, Burke's original condemnation would hang over the obscure and laborious efforts of the commissioners. By the time they finished their enquiries in 1830, the original £5.7 million had ballooned to over £30.4 million in claims, a staggering £2 billion in today's monetary values. By then, both the Nabob and his supposed creditors were long since dead; the Company had also absorbed the Carnatic into its mercantile empire. In effect, the contest was a battle between a phantom principality and the descendents of financial vampires, adjudicated by dry clerks in the Carnatic Office. In their final report, the commissioners awarded £5,611, five shillings and sixpence to Mary Dendaretegui of Hoxton, sister and administratix of Gideon Firth who had once been the Import Warehouse Keeper in Madras back in 1781. But they also turned down a claim of 1,167 star pagodas, 14 fanams and 30 cash for the deceased Koondul Rom, grandson of the Vencunna Pundit who had submitted the original debt. In the end, just £2.7 million of the debts were judged to be genuine, a tiny fraction of the monstrous £30 million in demands. But this was almost half the opening gambit of £5.7 million, far above the expectations of contemporaries in 1806 who'd expected just a tenth to be paid. Ending their 'intricate and extensive investigations into subjects remote in time and place', the Carnatic Commissioners concluded that they had succeeded in defeating 'the most iniquitous combinations of fraud which was ever submitted to a legal tribunal'.[32] What they had overseen was, in effect, the first resolution of a 'third world' debt crisis.

GEOGRAPHICAL MORALITY

Four months after his unsuccessful attack on the Arcot debt, Burke turned his attention from Madras to Bengal and shortly after Hastings landed at Plymouth, Burke commenced the process that would last for another decade in an epic impeachment trial. What hampered Burke was the poverty of legal instruments he had at his disposal to bring the Company's executives to account. He could try for a vote of censure, as Burgoyne had done in 1773, or revive the ancient practice of impeachment. Neither of these could

be considered effective judicial procedures. In an impeachment proceeding, for example, the House of Commons first had to vote on charges to be judged by the House of Lords, which would then sit as a court rather than a legislative body. The flaws in such a process are obvious. Majority voting rather than evidence or law would decide the matter, with party loyalties likely to have greater sway than the merits of the case. Furthermore, as Macaulay would observe many years later, 'ordinary criminal justice knows nothing of the set-off. The greatest desert cannot be pleaded to a charge of the slightest transgression.'[33] Yet, in the system of political justice represented first by Burgoyne's motion against Clive and then by Burke's impeachment of Hastings, off-setting is exactly what took place. Hastings's strongest defence was not that he was innocent, but that 'extraordinary means were necessary, and those exerted with a strong hand, to preserve the Company's interests from sinking'.[34] In such a situation, the possibility of a fair trial – for either side – vanished almost immediately.

Yet impeachment was the only tool at Burke's disposal. Writing to his ally, Philip Francis, Burke was clear that 'my business is not to consider what will convict Mr Hastings (a thing we all know to be impracticable) but what will acquit and justify myself to those few persons and to those distant times, which may take a concern in these affairs'.[35] It is testament to Burke's mastery of his brief that he not only swung the Commons around to his argument, but also managed to sustain the trial long after many had given it up as a lost cause. Pitt could easily have blocked the whole proceedings. Indeed, when Burke made his first charge against Hastings for his complicity in hiring out the Company's troops to suppress the Rohillas, Pitt's overwhelming majority carried the day. In their hearts, however, the government's leading lights knew that 'the force of evidence' – in Dundas's words – meant that Hastings simply had to face justice.[36] Dundas, of course, had led the parliamentary struggle for Hastings's recall in 1782. And, by backing Burke's motion for impeachment, Pitt and Dundas could free themselves of the stain of being mere tools of the nabobs. So, when the charge against Hastings's conduct towards Varanasi came to a vote in June 1786, Pitt signalled his consent.

In all, 20 charges were voted through by the Commons. The full trial opened on 13 February 1788 in Westminster Hall, with the cream of the British establishment looking on. The drama of the case and the fabulous Enlightenment language employed by Burke and his ally, the playwright/politician Richard Brinsley Sheridan,

are enough to give Hastings's impeachment a prominent place in eighteenth-century English history. Bringing the charges against Hastings for his abuse of the *begums* of Awadh, Sheridan compared Hastings to 'the writhing obliquity of the serpent' and damned him for a character that was all 'shuffling, ambiguous, dark, insidious, and little'. And as for the Company, it combined 'the meanness of a pedlar and the profligacy of pirates … wielding a truncheon with one hand, and picking a pocket with the other'.[37]

This was all good knock-about stuff. But what makes the trial so significant for the accountability of corporations are the principles upon which Burke based his case. For him, natural law meant that all humans should be accorded equal rights to justice, wherever they may be. 'The laws of morality', he declared on the third day of the trial, 'are the same everywhere, and that there is no action which would pass for an act of extortion, of peculation, of bribery, and oppression in England, that is not an act of extortion, of peculation, of bribery, and oppression in Europe, Asia, Africa and the world over.'[38] Against the corrosive relativism that was increasingly viewing India as an inferior land in which different standards of justice should be applied, Burke unfurled the standard of absolute values. 'I must do justice to the East', he declared, for 'I assert that their morality is equal to ours.' Full of contempt for what he saw as Hastings's 'geographical morality', Burke denounced the view that 'the duties of men are not to be governed by their relations to the great governor of the universe, or by their relations to men, but by climates, degrees of longitude and latitude, parallels not of life but of latitudes', adding in a wonderful image: 'as if, when you have crossed the equinoctial line, all the virtues die'. For someone who would become so opposed to Tom Paine's *Rights of Man* in the heat of the French Revolution, the peculiar thing is that in his contest with Hastings Burke propounded the case for universal human rights.

A SOFT IMPEACHMENT

For Burke, what best ensured that these 'laws of morality' were upheld was respect for organic systems of governance. The Company, however, had engineered a revolution in India overturning an established order for which Burke had an abiding reverence. In his Ninth Report, he had even compared the *zamindars* of Bengal to the landed aristocracy of France, whom he would later defend with such passion following the fall of the Bastille.[39] In the words

of the nineteenth-century Liberal politician John Morley, Burke demonstrated 'a reasoned and philosophic veneration for all old and settled order, whether in the free Parliament of Great Britain, in the ancient absolutism of Versailles, or in the secular pomp of Oudh [Awadh]'.[40] The puzzle for later generations of radicals opposing the British Empire in India was that it was the conservative Burke who demonstrated far the greatest sympathy for people cast aside by the Company conquest. In comparison, with later generations of liberals (notably the father-and-son pair, John and James Stuart Mill), and even socialists, such as Karl Marx, Burke was the real champion of India's identity. Rather than viewing history as a civilisational contest between primitive and progressive nations, Burke believed that each society had its own intrinsic value, which should not be sacrificed to the interests of profit or power.[41] 'The first step to empire is revolution', Burke argued as he opened his assault on Hastings in February 1788. For him, it was the Company's revolutionary character, the way its pursuit of market dominion led it to overturn both prince and peasant that was its most serious flaw. Against the arrogance of an England that saw only 'Oriental despotism' when it looked to the East, Burke presented a picture of a complex society of rights and responsibilities, underpinned by 'a law interwoven with the wisest, the most learned, and the most enlightened jurisprudence that perhaps ever existed in the world'.[42] If the trial demonstrated anything, it was 'the great lesson that Asiatics have rights, and that Europeans have obligations'.[43]

Burke and Sheridan certainly had rhetoric on their side. Burke's opening speech was four days long, and lashed Hastings with a verbal assault:

> It is with confidence that, ordered by the Commons, I impeach Warren Hastings Esquire, of high crimes and misdemeanours.
>
> I impeach him in the name of the people of India, whose laws, rights and liberties, he has subverted, whose properties he has destroyed, whose country he has laid waste and desolate.
>
> I impeach him in the name and by virtue of those eternal laws of justice which he has violated.
>
> I impeach him in the name of human nature himself, which he has cruelly outraged, injured, and oppressed, in both sexes, in every age, rank, situation and condition of life.

Women were carried out fainting, and even the Speaker was rendered speechless. When Sheridan presented the *begums*'s charge,

he took a whole week to complete his case, with spectators paying £50 a seat to soak up his rhetorical extravagance. And, when the marathon came to an end in April 1795, Burke completed the prosecution case with a nine-day closing address.

Yet, for all the sophistication of their analysis and the extent of their verbal prowess, the prosecution case was a muddle and a mess – a 'soft impeachment' to use the phraseology of Sheridan's great theatrical character, Mrs Malaprop.[44] The articles of impeachment were poorly drafted and lacked legal detail. The trial itself was interrupted by huge gaps in the proceedings, caused not least by the madness of King George III and the onset of the French Revolution. Even though the trial lasted a full seven years, the Lords only sat for 149 days, often for less than a few hours a day. To no-one's surprise, Hastings was acquitted of all charges in April 1795.

The injustice of the judgment still cries out to be answered. Looking across Hastings's actions as Governor-General, there is little doubt that many of the means he employed to promote the Company's interests were dubious to say the least, notably the conduct of the Rohilla war and the execution of Nandakumar – neither of which were included in the impeachment. His treatment of the Rajah of Varanasi and the *begums* of Awadh were also deeply suspect, even by the standards of eighteenth-century foreign policy. And his fiscal policies generated real oppression in Bengal and Awadh. Hastings certainly needed to be censured for these failures of judgement and the suffering they caused. But impeachment proved to be a blunt and obsolete tool for reining in such policy abuses. Furthermore, the broad-brush prosecution brought by Burke meant that Hastings escaped conviction for some clear breaches of corporate rules. It is incontestable that Hastings accepted a series of 'presents', thereby breaking the covenant he had signed with the Company. In addition, the charge brought against him for corruption in his handling of the opium contract – giving it to the son of the Company chairman – is simply 'unanswerable'.[45] The tragedy was that these unambiguous crimes were not separated out from the unwieldy impeachment case and pursued in the criminal courts to their logical conclusion.

THE ROAD NOT TAKEN

The epic struggle between Company and Parliament that raged in the 1770s and 1780s remains on display at London's National Portrait Gallery. Up the stairs to the second floor are the galleries charting

Britain's rise to imperial dominance in the eighteenth century. On one side of the room hangs Joshua Reynolds's joyous portrait of 1766–68 showing Warren Hastings as a young Company executive, a few years away from his appointment as governor-general. On the other side, Philip Francis looks down from the wall, his face full of disappointment. Painted by James Lonsdale between 1806 and 1810, Francis had not only failed to overthrow Hastings, but had failed to become governor-general himself, winning the Order of the Bath as a consolation prize. In an unconscious reconstruction of the duel that exploded between these two on the lawns of Belvedere, the space that separates these portraits is almost exactly the 14 paces that divided the two men one dawn in August 1780. Yet the captions say nothing about the duel they fought over the future of one of the world's most powerful corporations.

Perhaps one reason for this depiction of a conflict-free rise to imperial pre-eminence is the raw reality that by the middle of the 1780s, it was clear that in the harsh battle between the imperatives of power and principle, justice had been the loser. Fox's unpopularity at court and his apparent attempt to monopolise the Company's patronage shattered the Whig bid for corporate reform in 1783. Pitt and Dundas played the system far more effectively, gaining the reality of power in all essential matters, without any associated responsibility. To the surprise of many, they had supported Burke's impassioned attempt to impeach Hastings. But Pitt and Dundas had little to lose, realising that allowing the proceedings to go ahead would help them draw a line under the Company's disreputable past. More importantly, they knew that Burke could never succeed. By the time the impeachment verdict was given in April 1795, the political mood in Britain had been transformed. Instead of restoring the nation's honour in India, defending the country against the revolutionary ambitions of France was the order of the day. Burke's effort to overthrow the principle of 'geographical morality' had ended in glorious failure.

As Adam Smith had warned in the midst of the American War of Independence, pride and patriotism would always interfere in efforts to resolve the ethical imperatives of empire. Few, if any, of those who challenged the Company's practices questioned British rule in India. Burke, for example, was insistent that Britain had been given control of Bengal by 'the Sovereign Disposer'. For both Burke and Francis, the Company's incompetence was not just an ethical disaster, but also risked losing valuable acquisitions in India.

Almost alone among his contemporaries, George Dempster (1732–1818) argued that Britain should cease ruling India. A friend of the poet Robert Burns, Dempster became a shareholder of the Company in 1763 and was elected a director in the dark days of 1769 and 1772. Perturbed by the direction the Company was taking, Dempster angered his fellow directors by urging that the Company should relinquish its territorial acquisitions and return to its trading roots. Unable to make any progress in the Company, Dempster resigned and entered Parliament to pursue the case against empire by state or corporation. Speaking in the debate on Fox's India Bill in November 1783, Dempster was profound in his critique, arguing that the Company's excesses now meant that its charter 'ought to be destroyed, for the sake of the country, for the sake of India, and for the sake of humanity'.[46] But dealing with the Company was insufficient: Britain as a whole should renounce control. 'I for my part lament that the navigation to India had ever been discovered,' Dempster concluded, adding 'I now conjure ministers to abandon all ideas of sovereignty in that quarter of the world: for it would be wiser to make some one of the native princes king of the country, and leave India to itself.'

Dempster's pleas fell on deaf ears. The Company's commercial and imperial position was central to the British state's global struggle with revolutionary France. The loss of Britain's American colonies reinforced this process, placing ever-greater emphasis on retaining the Company's Indian possessions. For all the high-flown critique of the Company's behaviour, the deal that emerged was limited, tawdry and unworthy of the Enlightenment. One of the great 'might have beens' of history is to imagine the application of the ideals of the American Revolution to that other problem province of the British Empire, India. But India was not modern, European or Christian, and so was ultimately subjected to a second-class settlement, treated as a piece of property rather than a living community of people. Instead of the path laid out by Dempster, the Company would become a mercantile sovereign, enjoying its commercial swansong in China tea – paid for by Bihari opium – before ending its days as a dividend-paying administrator of India.

8
The Toxic Exchange

POISONOUS FOG

Passing through a fortress-like gateway, the tree-lined courtyard is dominated by two imposing statues. In front is a larger than life group of terracotta soldiers clustered around a cannon pointing out to sea. Around the base, golden panels show Chinese workers smashing opium chests, all bearing the corporate logo, UEIC (United East India Company). A few metres beyond stands the second statue, this time in bronze, depicting a seated Lin Zexu, the high-flying commissioner sent by the Qing Emperor Daoguang in 1838 to close down the illegal opium trade in Canton (Guangzhou). Compared with its near invisibility back home in London, Humen's Opium War Museum is absolutely clear about the Company's role in China's fall from grace in the early nineteenth century. Inside the museum itself, panels declare that 'the Company was the director of the opium trade that corrupted and disgraced the Chinese nation'. Prints of the Company's headquarters on Leadenhall Street are displayed alongside maps, artefacts and vivid tableau that show how opium smuggling brought China into 'a world of poisonous fog'. Alongside the patriotic efforts of the Chinese themselves to suppress the drug, the museum also honours the 'righteous Western people' who campaigned against the opium trade, such as Britain's great liberal politician, William Ewart Gladstone.

The raw details of the Company's involvement in the opium trade are well known. From the mid-eighteenth century, European merchants such as the East India Company could only do business with the Qing Empire through Canton on the southern Pearl River, importing silver to pay for the teas, silks and porcelain that were so eagerly sought after back in Europe. For half a century, the Company endured a persistent balance of payments deficit with China. But after repeated efforts to liberalise the trade and expand the flow of British manufactured goods, the Company fell back on the one product that the Chinese would pay for: opium. Grown under Company monopoly in Bihar, opium was auctioned in Calcutta to private traders who then smuggled it into China generating the

silver needed for the Company's 'investment' in tea and other goods. There was never any doubt that this was a contraband trade, but financial necessity and the apparent easy corruptibility of the Qing bureaucracy overcome any ethical scruples the Company's directors might have had. With Mughal India, the enduring question of how the Company could cut the outflow of bullion to pay for its luxury goods had been resolved through conquest; with Qing China, it was reversed through drug-running. The Opium Wars followed, with British forces intervening to enforce their right to free trade, prising open the Qing Empire, seizing strategic sites such as Hong Kong and forcing through legalization across the country.

For the Company, China was the making of its third great fortune after the initial success in spice and the triumph with Indian textiles. Tea flooded into its London warehouses particularly after the reforms of 1784, which had slashed import duties so deeply. The repeated succession of wars that followed the Plassey revolution meant that its military exploits in India attracted the bulk of contemporary attention. But it was in China where the Company's original commercial intent lasted longest, and where the deepest profits lay up until it lost its trading privileges in 1833. The problem was that this most monopolistic of corporations had met its match in the Qing Empire of China. It required the full intervention of the British state and the guns of the new generation of steamships – the first appropriately named *Nemesis* – to break China's control of its foreign trade. Britain may well have won the sordid conflict of the second opium war. But by then the Company was no more, its lumbering monopolistic ways replaced by a new generation of aggressive free traders such as Jardine Matheson who (initially at least) did not seek to hide the narcotic origins of their fortunes.

AN IMPERIAL BEVERAGE

The Company's predicament was in many respects a problem of success. Just as in India, the English Company was a latecomer to the China trade, following in the wake of the Portuguese who had established their base on the edge of the Pearl River delta at Macao in 1557. And it was the Iberian princess, Catherine of Braganza who not only brought Bombay in her dowry, but a chest of China tea. Legend gives the first drink of *ch'a* to the Emperor Shen Lung in 2737 BC; historical records of tea drinking extend as far back to the Han dynasty in the third century AD. But for Britain, it was the return of the king in 1660 that started the tea craze. In September

of that year, the London diarist Samuel Pepys took a 'Cupp of Tee (a China drink)'.

The first attempt to open trade between Britain and China had nothing to do with tea or indeed the Company, however. The interloping Courteen Association had sailed to Canton in 1637, but failed to sell any of its English goods, using 80,000 'pieces of eight' to buy Chinese luxuries. The visit quickly deteriorated when the Portuguese warned the authorities that the newcomers were little more than 'rogues, thieves, and beggars'. Trouble broke out, the Chinese attacked Captain Weddell's fleet, who answered with a bombardment, and the demolition of 'what they could'.[1] Following the Restoration, the Company tried once more to establish trading relations, and in 1664, placed its first token order for 100 lb of tea. But trade was sporadic, and it was only from 1699, when 13,082 lb of tea were purchased, that regular trade was established. Even then, it was China's luxury silk and porcelain that attracted the most attention until well into the eighteenth century. Such was the demand for china that copy-cat enterprises were established in Britain, notably the short-lived 'New Canton' factory in Bow, established in 1747 to produce imitation soft-paste porcelain a few miles away from the Company's docks on the Thames.

The Company's reliance on cheap imports of Indian textiles had encountered popular resistance from weavers. But tea had no domestic competitor – and indeed offered considerable health benefits for a population without access to clean water and a fondness for gin. Initially, the combination of high import duties and the Company's monopoly pricing held back British consumption of tea. The result was that more tea was probably smuggled into Britain than sold legally at the Company's auctions at East India House. But when the tea tax was cut in 1747, imports jumped from just 2.9 per cent of the total value of the Company's imports from Asia to over 20 per cent. Slave-grown sugar also sweetened the bitter taste of tea, creating a perfect imperial symbiosis between the Atlantic and Asian trades. By 1760, when imports stood at just over 6 million pounds, the value of tea had climbed to almost 40 per cent of the Company's business, vying with the Bengali textile trade. Further freeing up the tea trade lay at the heart of the twin government rescues of the Company in 1773 and 1784. If the first had backfired in the Boston Tea Party, the second was a master-stroke. The Commutation Act cut tea duties from 119 per cent to just 12.5 per cent making smuggling far less attractive, driving up the Company's legal sales from under 10 million pounds

in 1784 to almost 15 million pounds in 1785. One estimate suggests that of the 189 million pounds of tea consumed in Britain between 1773 and 1784, only 55 million pounds had come via the East India Company; in the decade to 1800, total consumption soared to 267million pounds and the Company's share accounted for more than 85 per cent.[2] Over the next half-century, the Company's tea sales doubled again from to nearly 33 million pounds in 1833.

The Company's quarterly auctions were now dominated by the four main black teas (Bohea, Congou, Souchon and Pekoe) along with the three key green teas (Singlo, Heyson and Bing). At its September 1798 sale, the tea catalogue ran to 635 pages and the auction took six days. Each chest was finely graded according to its character, all the way from 'Good Ordinary to But Middling' through 'But Middling to Middling' and on to 'Good Middling to Middling Good'. And despite the inevitable squabbles with the tea brokers that erupted, the Company enjoyed a reputation for consistent high quality. Yet unlike the Indian textile trade, where the Company had built up an in-depth, first-hand experience of the major weaving centres, not a single British merchant had ever visited green tea districts of Zhejiang and Anhui provinces, or the black tea heartlands in the Wu Yi mountains where the *bo he* (red tea) originated.

THE GUANGZHOU GRIP

The Manchu Empire of Da Qing (the Great Brightness) viewed itself as the centre of world civilisation, and classed Europeans as 'outer barbarians' who would be generously allowed to export the goods they so desperately desired – tea, silk, porcelain, tortoise shell, camphor, rhubarb and dragon's blood – but would have no access to the Empire itself. Indeed, trade would be conducted not as a form of exchange between equals, but as a mechanism to generate the maximum amount of tribute from the foreigners to the Emperor. The Qing was a sprawling cosmopolitan conquest empire. They were keen to make money from trade at the maritime margin, but were even more insistent to maintain a tight control over commerce, not least to avoid any security threat to the tranquillity of their rule.[3]

As the tea trade grew in the first half of the eighteenth century, the Company had tried to establish trading relations further north at Xiamen, Zhoushan and Ningbo to get closer to the tea producing regions. But in February 1757, a few months before the pivotal battle at Plassey, the Qianlong Emperor banned all trade except in

Canton on the Pearl River, conveniently far away from the northern capital in Beijing. A highly restrictive set of trading terms was then put in place to govern the Company's trade in Canton, eventually formalized as the 'Eight Regulations'. The details are instructive of the degree of control the Qing sought to exercise over the Company:

1. No warships were allowed to enter the Pearl River.
2. Europeans were only allowed to live in their 'factories' outside the city walls during the winter shipping season (September to March), and were not permitted to bring wives or weapons.
3. All the pilots, boatmen and agents working for foreigners had to be licensed.
4. Only a fixed number of servants could work for the foreigners.
5. The use of sedan chairs and boating for pleasure was forbidden along with excursions into Canton itself. Guided visits to the public gardens on Honan Island were allowed for groups of less than ten as long as they returned before dark and did not get drunk.
6. All business had to be carried out through a monopoly guild of local merchants, the Kung-Hang (Co-Hong).
7. No smuggling and no credit was allowed, and the Co-Hong had to file a declaration that no opium was on board.
8. All ships coming to trade must anchor at Whampoa (Huangpu), 13 miles below Canton, where loading and unloading would proceed under imperial inspection.[4]

This arrangement was not the result of careful two-way negotiation, but simply the expression of the Qing Empire's unilateral will. The Company had no independent legal status in China. It clung on to a narrow strip of land on the riverside beyond the city walls where it rented its warehouses from the Co-Hong, alongside rival Danish, Dutch, French and Swedish companies, as well as independent Parsee and American merchants.[5] What became known as the Canton System was strikingly different from the relatively permissive *firmans* agreed with the Mughals in India. Certainly, the Company had been formally excluded from the internal trade of India, which the Company and its executives breached in the *dastak* scandal. But in India, the Company's merchants were able to establish (and fortify) its own ports, set up mints and courts, visit and haggle directly with producers, as well as learn the local language (and marry local women if they so wished). Technological necessity and regulatory effectiveness explained much of the difference in

bargaining power. After the voyages of Zheng He in the early fifteenth century, the Ming had turned inwards, and before 1500 had banned the construction of seagoing sheets; the war ministry even destroyed the records of Zheng He's voyages.[6] The Portuguese arrived on the coast of China just a few years later in 1513. By the time the Company had come to dominate the China trade in the eighteenth century, China had nothing to match the firepower of its 'East Indiaman'. But the Company's mastery of the sea, which had won over the Mughals – who had needed marine protection for the *haj* to Mecca – was of little use to the domestically focused Qing. And until the arrival of steamships in the mid-nineteenth century, European fleets were insufficient to project their maritime force against China's land-based military.

For decades, the centralised rigour of the Qing bureaucracy defeated the Company's constant probings for greater freedom of access. The Canton trade was arranged as an imperial monopoly governed by the superintendent of maritime customs, the *Hai Kwan Pu*, a Manchu appointed from the court in Beijing. This 'Hoppo' had a dual role: first, to ensure that the barbarian merchants were kept in a subservient position; and second, to squeeze as much revenue out of them for the direct benefit of the emperor. The customs duties collected by the Hoppo were more of an imperial perk than a regular tax, and the Company never saw the Emperor's decree that set out the levies – a particular irritant for traders used to parliamentary approval of taxation.[7] The Hoppo dealt exclusively with the foreign traders via the Co-Hong who were expected to make a series of annual donations in return. By the nineteenth century, the list included presents for the Emperor's birthday (£56,000), the compulsory purchase of ginseng (£46,000), presents for the Hai Kwan Pu himself (£14,000), and for flood protection on the Yellow River (£10,000), all of which would then be extracted from the Company and other traders.[8] To bring stability to the empire's revenues, an additional reserve was established in 1780 – the Consoo Fund – financed from a special customs levy.

In the relations between the Co-Hong and the Company, one monopoly met another – and did business. The first attempt at establishing a local monopoly in Canton was made in 1715, and was finalised as the Co-Hong in 1760. For the Qing authorities, the Co-Hong acted as a commercial and political buffer. Each of the 13 Hong traded on their own account, but together formed the sole channel through which the Company was forced to deal. Each Company ship was assigned a Hong merchant who would guarantee

good behaviour and the payment of customs. The Company would then assign its tea contracts in 21 shares among the Hong merchants, hoping to barter British and, increasingly, Indian goods in return. This barter had to be supplemented by cash purchases made in silver, initially supplied by the Company's own bullion exports and, later on, from the proceeds from private trade. As for the Hong, they only took British manufactures because they had to, generally making a loss when they tried to sell them in China. This was just one of many reasons that membership of the Hong was viewed more as a burden than a privilege by the Cantonese commercial class. Regulatory obligations and commercial risks took their toll, and the number of Hong merchants often fell far below the maximum of 13 to just four in 1782. But those that survived could become fabulously wealthy on the back of the Company's business. The most famous of all, Howqua of the Ewo Hong (1765–1843), was apparently worth $26 million Spanish dollars in 1834.[9]

For the English, the Canton system was deeply frustrating. But it was also strikingly familiar. Indeed, the Company could itself be described as a kind of 'English Co-Hong': a monopoly of merchants from a single city with exclusive rights to trade with a portion of the outside world. In addition, the structural corruption of the system, with its manifold opportunities for private benefit all the way from the Company merchants through the Co-Hong to the Hoppo and on to the imperial court far away in Beijing, was not so different from the way in which the Stuarts had interacted with the Company extracting presents and loans in return for commercial favours. What was truly distinctive was the sheer scale of the operation, which ballooned as the demand for tea climbed in the late eighteenth century. Between 1720 and 1806, the volume of trade between Canton and Europe doubled every 18 years.[10] The reason why the Company put up with all these indignities was simple: China was the world's only source of tea. In spite of all the aggravations, the Company prospered, with its operations in Canton led by its commercial elite, the Supercargoes. These senior merchants superintended the voyages out from Britain, the trade in China and the return leg home. These executives would come together as the Select Committee – known dismissively as 'the Select' by the up-and-coming private traders. For the Select, caution and mutual trust became essential elements of the trade. Deals were verbal and honoured in full. Only after the first Opium War were written contracts required. The Co-Hong accepted the Company's word when it reported each year the number of chests

that had failed London's quality control. Sub-standard tea was either dumped in the Thames and the Co-Hong's account was debited accordingly, or, extraordinarily, sent all the way back to Canton. Equally, the directors were quite willing to reimburse a Chinese merchant whose goods had been undervalued by the Company's agents, the Supercargoes. 'In their eyes', observed two experts on the tea trade, 'long-term considerations were more important than temporary profit'.[11]

The great opportunity of the tea trade lay in the Company's ability to double its money on the purchase cost in Canton when the chests were auctioned in London. But to make a profit, the Company first had to find the silver bullion to pay for all this tea, which made up over 90 per cent of the value of goods sent to Canton each year. Without its conquests in India, the Company would simply have been unable to find the cash to match the ever-rising imports of tea. This was why the acquisition of the *diwani* had been so rapturously received by the Company and its shareholders. But the hope that the China investment could be paid for through the taxes from its Indian territories proved illusory. A more sustainable method was required to mobilise the produce of India via the 'country trade'. Shipped out of Company ports at Calcutta, Bombay and Madras by independent British and Asian merchants, Indian cotton, sandalwood, pepper and elephant tusks would be sold in Canton: the resulting silver would then be deposited in the Company's treasury in return for bills of exchange, which could be cashed in Calcutta or London. But even the proceeds of this healthy trade between India and China was not sufficient to balance the books. Ultimately, something else was required: opium.

OPERATION BETSY

The use of opium for medical purposes stretched back in China to the Sung Dynasty, but recreational drug-use really started in the coastal provinces during the seventeenth century. Opium was widely used worldwide: the Indians tended to eat it; Europeans mixed it with brandy and drank it as laudanum. But the Chinese smoked it, which created a far greater addictive potential and also spawned an elaborate sub-culture around the pipe. From its base at Macao, the Portuguese imported opium grown in the India's central Malwa region, and British traders joined the fray buying opium in south-east Asia. Qing concern at the spread of opium smoking led to a ban in 1729 on its sale and consumption,

except for medicinal purposes. Punishments were severe. Sellers of opium were forced to wear a wooden collar for a month, and then banished to the frontier. Shopkeepers were to be punished 'in the same way as propagators of depraved doctrine – strangled after a few months'.[12] The Company was then in one of its 'quiett' phases, and its traders in Canton respected the imperial decision. Access to the Chinese market was exceedingly precarious, and the Company's agents did not want to engage in any practices that might threaten their core business.

It was the desperation of Warren Hastings that led to the first organised attempt by the Company to smuggle opium into China. Throughout the East, the opium of the Bihar region around Patna was famed for its excellence. After Plassey, the British had taken over the *nawabi* monopoly over opium production. When Robert Clive left India for the last time in 1767, an estimated 100,000 lb of Patna opium was being smuggled into China via Macao. Taking over as the first governor-general, Warren Hastings closed down the infamous 'Patna Gang' of executives who hogged the trade, viewing opium as a 'pernicious article of luxury, which ought not to be permitted but for the purpose of foreign commerce only'.[13] The monopoly purchase of opium from the Bihari peasants was outsourced to a contractor – Stephen Sulivan, son of the Company chairman Laurence Sulivan and Hastings' patron. There Hastings may well have left it, but for the outbreak of war both on land against Mysore and at sea against the French and the Dutch who had joined the side of the patriots in the American War of Independence. By 1781, the smooth flow of trade with China and the East Indies had been broken; unsold opium lay in the Company's warehouses in Calcutta and unshipped tea piled up in Canton.

To break the deadlock, Hastings hired two ships, the *Betsy* and the *Nonsuch*, to carry 3,460 chests of Company opium directly to Canton. Defending himself at his impeachment in London many years later, Hastings described his decision as driven by 'the critical situation of our affairs', arguing that his choice was 'whether I should take the chance of sending opium to China and the Eastern Islands on the Company's account, in order to furnish our Supracargoes at China with a supply of specie, or suffer the opium to remain one season in Calcutta and risque the detention of the Company's ships one year at Canton'.[14] For his accuser, Edmund Burke, Hastings was clearly 'criminal in his attempt to introduce it clandestinely into China', adding that 'no profit could

compensate for the probable risque to which their trade with China was thereby exposed or for the certain dishonour and consequent distrust which the East India Company must incur in the eyes of the Chinese government by being engaged in a low, clandestine traffic prohibited by the laws of the country'.[15] The expedition was a shambles. First, the *Betsy* was captured by the Dutch south of Malacca. Then the *Nonsuch* made it through to Macao, but only after flying a French flag from Java to the Philippines and a Spanish ensign on to China. Once in Canton, the Hong merchants either refused to buy the opium or offered derisory prices. Eventually, the chests were sold at a loss, with the 'Supracargoes' begging Hastings that 'we could wish you would not in future pursue the same method of supplying us with funds except in the last necessity', bemoaning the 'trouble and perplexity of this ill-fated project'.[16] The Directors in London agreed and admonished Hastings that it was 'beneath the Company to be engaged in such a clandestine trade; we positively forbid any more opium being sent on the Company's account'.[17] But expanding production and export through private traders was perfectly fine, and during Hastings tenure the Company's revenue from opium sales doubled.

Two years after the failure of Hastings' escapade with the opium trade, the Company's subservient position in China was firmly re-emphasised. In November 1784, a salute was fired from the *Lady Hughes* whilst docked in Canton, accidentally killing a Chinese boatman. Rather than risk an interruption to its trade, the Company handed over the gunner, who was then secretly strangled. This inability to be governed by its own set of laws would fester in the British memory for decades. In December 1833, after the Company's monopoly had been withdrawn and months before the dawn of free trade, the *China Repository*, published an article signed by a 'British Merchant' – most likely written by William Jardine: 'has not the Chinese commerce of Great Britain been purchased with the blood of the gunner of the *Lady Hughes*?', it thundered. 'Has not his immolation up to this day remained unavenged? There is a smell of blood still.'[18] Like the 'Black Hole' of Calcutta, this victim mentality would inspire and justify future retribution in the minds of British merchants and politicians.

A deal needed to be done to reset the relationship on the basis of commercial equality. The Company's solution was to launch a trade mission under the banner of the British Crown, which it paid for to the tune of £78,000, a £7.4 million budget in today's prices. The 1792–4 embassy was led by Lord George Macartney,

a former Governor of Madras, who sought a set of perfectly rational European Enlightenment goals: a treaty of commerce and friendship; a permanent British ambassador in Beijing; the opening up of Zhoushan, Ningbo and Tientsin to foreign commerce; the granting of an island base near Zhoushan as a trading base, which would be closer to the tea-growing and silk-producing regions; the establishment of a warehouse in Beijing (as the Russians had once enjoyed); and the abolition of arbitrary customs over and above those in the Emperor's decree. Overall, however, the message of the Company's chairman, Francis Baring, was one of caution: 'we are therefore of the opinion that the first and foremost object is neither to impair or injure our present situation.'[19] In particular, he warned Macartney that 'you should be on your guard against one stipulation which perhaps will be demanded of you, which is the exclusion of the trade of Opium as being prohibited by the Laws of the Empire'.[20] At the time of the embassy, 2,500 chests were being imported by private traders, covering around half the Company's commercial deficit.

The mission was doomed. With his presents and entourage, Macartney was allowed to visit Beijing and the Manchu capital of Jehol, and attended an imperial audience. But there was never any hope of real negotiations. For the Chinese, Macartney was simply a 'tribute envoy'. Even before Macartney had set foot on Chinese soil, the imperial authorities had already written their letter of dismissal. Emperor Qianlong's edict to King George III started badly and got worse. For Qianlong, the motivation for Macartney's visit was clear: 'You, O King, live beyond the confines of many seas, nevertheless, impelled by your humble desire to partake of the benefits of our civilization, you have dispatched a mission respectfully bearing your memorial.' Rejecting Macartney's terms as 'contrary to all usage of my dynasty', the Emperor stated categorically 'I set no value on objects strange or ingenious, and have no use for your country's manufactures'.[21] In a final humiliation, the palace where Macartney was accommodated in Canton had been built with revenues from the Consoo fund, which, of course, had been financed by the Company's own trade.

The Macartney mission marked a turning point in British perceptions of China. Any previous sense of the superiority of China – which had won the admiration of European intellectuals such as Voltaire and Goethe – was overturned. The mission had revealed that the Qing Empire was lagging Europe in terms of governance, economics and technology. Macartney was clear that if the Chinese

tried to interfere with foreign trade, then 'a few frigates could in a few weeks destroy all coastal communications from Hainan to Beizhili'.[22] But he advised against any rash intervention that would interrupt the flow of manufactures from Britain, cotton and opium from India and tea from China. 'The Empire of China', he concluded, 'is an old, crazy first rate Man-of-War' which overawes its neighbours 'by her bulk and appearance'. Looking ahead, 'she may not perhaps sink outright; she may drift for a time as a wreck and then will be dashed to pieces on the shore; but she can never be rebuilt'.[23] The outbreak of the long war with revolutionary France in 1793 meant that any notion of a military resolution was delayed well into the nineteenth century. Another embassy under Lord Amherst was tried in the first year of peace, 1816, with the same results. And so the drift continued, with the Company steadily expanding its sale of opium to private traders, and corruption corroding the regulatory authority of the Chinese state. In 1799, the Qing issued a definitive prohibition on opium, complaining of the spread of this 'destructive and ensnaring vice'. But down in Canton, local officials were receiving a fixed fee per chest to look the other way.[24]

THE POPPY AND THE CAMELIA[25]

In the first half of the nineteenth century, the commercial nexus of opium and tea became a structural part of the British imperial establishment. Import duties on tea provided a tenth of Britain's tax base, while sales of opium generated a seventh of the Company's revenues in India. But the dynamics went deeper still: without opium exports into China, Britain could not have bought the tea it needed. In the words of Michael Greenberg, 'opium was no hole-in-the-corner petty smuggling trade, but probably the largest commerce of the time in any single commodity'.[26] The Company lay at the heart of the nexus, playing multiple roles: as agricultural regulator and auctioneer of opium, as arranger and banker for its export and sale in China, as monopoly exporter of tea into Britain, and as provider of military might to control its sources of supply.

In India, the Company's original 1773 monopoly of the sale of opium in its Bengal territories was supplemented by exclusivity over its manufacture from 1797. This market dominance enabled the Company to purchase opium at below the cost of production. Buying at a cost equating to 50 Spanish dollars, the price at auction rose from 470 dollars in 1787–88 to a peak of 2,554 dollars in

1813–14, when the entry of Malwa opium drove down the price (but drove up the volume).

The Company was able to maintain this system by providing advances to the farmers for opium production, keeping the peasantry in a form of debt peonage. On top of this, a large proportion of the Company's land taxes were received in kind from goods such as cotton or opium, which could then be sold at a profit in Canton. The opium was mixed specially to suit the Chinese taste and the chests would be stamped with the Company's *chop* (name) as a symbol of quality. At auction, the opium was bought by private traders licensed by the Company for export to the Chinese market. As administrator of India, the Company was assiduous to discourage domestic consumption of opium for both health and commercial reasons.

Table 8.1 Opium exports from India to China 1800–1900, in chests

1800–1	4,788
1804–5	3,358
1809–10	4,246
1814–15	3,872
1819–20	3,091
1821–22	6,446
1824–5	12,639
1829–30	22,534
1833–4	23,608
1834–5	23,983
1838–9	35,736
1839–40	23,802
1844–5	36,942
1849–50	51,606
1854–55	77,379
1859–60	75,822
1864–5	84,491
1869–70	88,685
1874–5	94,745
1879–80	105,508
1884–5	86,579
1889–90	85,166
1894–5	68,838
1899–1900	67,350

Sources: Tyler, 1857; Rowntree, 1906.

After Hastings' debacle, the Company was insistent that none of its own ships trading with China should carry opium, leaving it to private traders. But its imprint on the private trade was profound,

with all private traders requiring a licence from the Company to do business with China. After the opium had been successfully smuggled into China, the proceeds would be paid into the Company's Canton treasury in return for bills of exchange, payable in Calcutta or London. The absence of goods that the private traders could export in bulk from China – since tea was still a Company monopoly – meant that this banking facility from the Company was the best and safest way of remitting profits. Periodically, the imperial authorities in Beijing would try to enforce the ban on opium. In 1811, the Company was told that it must show special co-operation with the authorities' wishes as opium was known to originate in British India. But the Company executives in China were sanguine, writing to the Directors that 'we are perfectly satisfied that it is merely made *pro forma*, and without the least intention of taking any effectual steps for the suppression of a trade which the officers of the government have so long and so notoriously found it in their interests to connive at'.[27] Then in 1821, the Chinese authorities successfully managed to suppress opium smuggling in Canton itself, only to force it to the outer anchorages at Lintin and, later, Hong Kong. Writing back to the Directors in London, the supercargoes warned that this could result in a 'serious interruption of this most important branch of trade', adding that 'we were desirous to avoid the slightest implication on the part of the Honourable Company, and at the same time not to oppose unnecessary impediments to the trade'.[28] Moving the smuggling offshore to Lintin actually turbocharged the trade. Opium overtook cotton imports into China in 1823, and had grown three-fold by the end of the decade.

All these relationships from the Bihari peasant to the Canton opium smuggler underpinned the Company's commercial swansong, tea. In spite of all the buffetings of the free trade lobby, the Company managed to retain its exclusive monopoly until 1833. A special class of ship was chartered by the Company: at 1,200 tons the ships were 50 per cent larger than the traditional vessels for India. These were the 'aristocrats of the seas' and in 1826, the China fleet of 34 ships brought back 40 million pounds of tea, the pinnacle of the trade. But it was opium that provided the essential financial lubricant for this last hurrah. At the turn of the century, the Company was selling 46 lb of tea in London for every 1 lb of opium smuggled into China; by 1833, the ratio had fallen dramatically to 1 lb of opium for 10 lb of tea, as tea sales expanded by a third and opium grew ten-fold.

Back in India, the Company also intervened with military force to protect its dominant position as opium producer. In the early nineteenth century, increasing volumes of Malwa opium grown in the Maratha lands were being exported through Portugal's residual outposts in Goa and Damaun to Macao. This depressed the price for the Company's Bengal brand, prompting Governor-General Wellesley to call in 1803 for action to prevent further growth and achieve 'its ultimate annihilation'.[29] Many factors contributed to the Company's incessant wars with the Marathas, and controlling the opium trade was certainly among them. In essence, 'the revenue from Bengal opium was being used to finance a war to secure the revenue from Malwa opium', observed Brian Inglis in his history of the opium wars.[30] But the anarchic nature of Malwa production meant that the Company was unable to suppress the trade. Instead, in 1821 it bought 4,000 chests on its own account and then auctioned these to private traders in Bombay. But this flooded the market and created a backlash in China against the poor quality of Malwa, damaging the Company's brand. The Company responded by increasing production in Bengal, and allowing Malwa to pass through Bombay on payment of a modest transit duty, capturing 90 per cent of the flow by 1831. The net result was that opium exports to China had grown from around 4,000 chests at the turn of the century to some 23,000 by the time the Company handed over its trading rights in 1833. As opium flooded in, so silver flowed out. From 1804 onwards, the Company needed to ship very little or no silver from Britain to China to pay for its tea. Between 1818 and 1833, one-fifth of total exports from China was in the form of treasure, and by 1826, the import of silver had ceased altogether.

Table 8.2 Flows of silver into and out of China 1761–1833

Date	*Tons*
1761–1770	132
1771–1780	293
1781–1790	637
1791–1800	200
1801–1810	1034
1811–1820	385
1821–1830	–88
1831–1833	–384

Source: Chang, 1964.

THE MOST GENTLEMANLIKE SPECULATION

On the surface, it looked like the Company continued to serenely rule the Eastern seas. Yet the Company's ability to manage the China trade on a commercial basis was in terminal decline. As we will see in the next chapter, it lost its monopoly of trade with India in 1813 and only the special circumstances facing trade in China delayed the inevitable: how could you have free trade with an empire that only allowed business to be conducted for half the year in a single city? The trajectory was clear, however. In the 15 years leading up to the Parliamentary renewal of its charter in 1833, the Company's profits fell from £1.3 million in the first five years, to £830,000 for the next five and just £565,000 for the last five.[31] Along with the expulsion of opium smuggling from Canton to Lintin Island in 1821 went the Company's mastery of the commercial initiative. In its stead came the new wave of private traders led by William Jardine and James Matheson. Dumfries-born William Jardine had been a doctor on the Company's ships, but left to pursue a business career in 1817 at the age of 33. Eight years his junior, James Matheson was also from Scotland and had gone straight into private trading in 1815. The two brought together a winning combination of commercial acumen and political verve, which they deployed with great skill as the Company lumbered dinosaur-like towards commercial extinction. The Company had always co-existed – often uneasily – with the private entrepreneurs pursuing the Country Trade within the Asian market. The onrush of Malwa opium had boosted supply and crashed the price, so in June 1823, Matheson sailed north under Spanish colours to sell the drug in the northern ports such as Xiamen; Matheson was already the Danish Consul in Canton, quite happy to adopt whatever nationality suited his commercial convenience.

The two came together as business partners in 1828 as Magniac & Co; Jardine Matheson only formally emerged in July 1832. The partnership became known as 'The Firm' with a mission to establish 'equitable commerce' – the end of the Company's monopoly and the opening up of China to all comers. Allying themselves with Britain's rising manufacturing interests who saw the Company as the barrier to increased exports to China, the pair brazenly broke the rules of the Canton System, operating as if their utopia of unregulated trade actually existed. The Firm's battering ram was opium, 'the safest and most gentlemanlike speculation I am aware of', wrote Jardine urging a friend to invest.[32] The Firm knew full well that the import

of opium into China was illegal, but it projected a special brand of commercial self-righteousness through its newspapers (such as the *Canton Register*) and in briefings to Parliament back in London. The pair was equally dismissive of what they saw as China's antiquated constraints on imports and Britain's obsolete system of Company domination. Even before the Company's monopoly had been legally removed, the Firm had made its 'Jardine tea mixture' a celebrated blend in England, shipping the chests to Europe before re-exporting into London, essentially a form of smuggling.

By then, even the East India Company was following in its wake, chartering the *Lord Amherst* – named after the ill-fated ambassador – to scout out trading opportunities for the fast approaching post-monopoly era. As this was a Company ship it carried no opium, much to the bemusement of the Chinese the crew met in Shanghai, Xiamen, Fuzhou and Ningbo. Instead, it brought literature in the form of *A Brief Account of the English Character* written by the former President of the Company's Canton Council, Charles Marjoribanks, and translated into rough Chinese. The aim was to present the English as solely interested in 'a pacific and amicable intercourse' through trade with China, an aspiration which had been frustrated by the Qing bureaucracy. As for interest in territorial conquest – such as in India – 'no assertion could be further from the truth ... The Government of so great an empire has no Thirst for Conquest'. But with an inkling of things to come, the pamphlet underscored the burning victimhood in the English mind 'very jealous to insult and ever ready to avenge oppression and injustice'.[33]

A stench of hypocrisy hung over the Company's final years of trade with China, an exchange that was nominally legal but ultimately dependent on structural complicity with drug smuggling. In India, the Company protested that opium cultivation was entirely normal – indeed, John Crawfurd, one of the Company's most senior executives in the region, would later declare that 'the poppy may be said to take the place of the vine and the olive in southern Europe'.[34] Extensive parliamentary inquiries into the China trade in the early 1830s found few faults in the Company's conduct; most agreed that the imperial benefit of the opium trade justified its blatant illegality. When Parliament questioned a former Company executive, W.B. Bayley in 1832 about the Company's involvement in the opium trade, the answer was legalistic and straightforward: as the opium was no longer its property when it left India, the Company 'could scarcely be said to trade in it'.[35] Moral concerns

were certainly present. But raw economic logic meant that any curb on opium production and export was inconceivable. Although the free trade momentum against the Company's monopoly of trade was unstoppable, its monopoly of supply was sacrosanct. The conclusion of Parliament's select committee enquiry was perfunctory: 'it does not seem advisable to abandon so important a source of revenue as the East India company's monopoly of opium in Bengal'.[36] As for its trading monopoly, this was so perforated by private trade that by 1830, just over a third of British trade with China was still carried on Company ships. No wonder that Charles Grant, speaking for the government in Parliamentary debates on 13 June 1833, which removed the last vestiges of monopoly, described the Company's position 'ambiguous and embarrassing, and occasionally, very invidious'. When it came to opium, Grant merely stated that 'the decrees of the emperor against it were not less strong than those of James 1st against the Virginia weed'. Few challenged this lazy establishment acceptance of corporate criminality, and it was left to a single MP, James Silk Buckingham, to declare that 'the whole guilt rested with the Company, as it was they who furnished the opium from India, and their supercargoes at Canton who licensed the smugglers in China, so that the beginning and the end of this illicit and contraband trade was theirs'. But others were looking ahead. For Marjoribanks, who had retired from the Company and had reappeared as a free trade advocate in Parliament, what was now needed was 'a system for firmness' to 'make the Europeans respected' in China.[37] And when Parliament finally decided to open the China trade to all in August 1833, Jardine Matheson was ready, shipping out the first consignments of free-trade tea.

The passing of a commercial era invariably brings financial crisis as assets are revalued. In the Company's case, the end of its trading monopoly created an unprecedented credit crunch back in Calcutta. The system of private 'agency houses' that had grown up under the Company's wings to serve the China trade was now exposed to the full glare of competition. Recession back in Britain exacerbated the situation and anticipating the end of the Company era, Palmer & Co, one of the oldest and largest of the Houses, was the first to fall in 1830, precipitating a complete crash. 'These great houses, which had been the principal channel of conducting the export and import trade of India for a half a century', wrote John Crawfurd, 'fell, one after another, in the course of three short years'.[38] Traders that had thrived by the market were quick to seek a government bail-out, appealing to London that 'the commercial prosperity of England

has more than once been shaken to its foundation, and has only been saved from utter destruction by the interference of Government itself'.[39] This time the government stuck to its free market guns. Over £15 million was lost in the collapse of the Agency Houses, just over £1 billion in today's prices. The British agency traders, so dismissive of the Canton System, would have done well to install their own Consoo Fund to repay the creditors.

ENFORCING THE POISON TRADE

Not everyone was gung-ho about the new era of laissez faire in the China seas. The editors of the Quarterly Review certainly feared that either 'the old Chinese goose may not take alarm and cease to lay her eggs' or that 'the free traders will decide upon cutting her up at once to get hold of the supposed treasure within.'[40] From April 1834, the Company was no longer directly involved in trade with China, but still administered its opium monopoly back in India, earning a 1,000 per cent profit at its auctions. A Superintendent of Trade was appointed by the British Government with the responsibility to represent its interests in Canton. But he had no authority over the free traders or indeed any diplomatic status with the Qing authorities. The first Superintendent, Charles Napier, broke all the rules of protocol, sailing into Canton in July 1834 without permission, in a warship no less. The Chinese authorities promptly stopped trade, and the Royal Navy retaliated by bombarding the forts that guarded the entrance to Canton. This time the British were outmanoeuvred, and climbed down; Napier died of fever shortly afterwards.

Just five years later, full-scale war broke out between Britain and China. In the Atlantic, the Royal Navy was proudly suppressing the slave trade; in the China seas, it would be deployed to enforce the rights of British traders to deal in opium. And behind the traders stood their supplier, the Company. Just months before hostilities broke out, William Jardine, the trader with the largest market share in the illicit drug, tried to shrug off the constant criticisms of his involvement by telling his fellow merchants in Canton, 'we are not smugglers, gentlemen! It is the Chinese government, it is the Chinese officers who smuggle, and who connive at and encourage smuggling; not we: and then look at the East India Company – why, the father of all smuggling and smugglers is the East India Company'.[41]

The break came in March 1839 with the arrival in Canton of Lin Zexu, sent as the emperor's special Commissioner to suppress the

opium trade. By then, there were an estimated 12.5 million opium smokers in China, draining the health and wealth of the nation. The Imperial Edict appointing Commissioner Lin had made clear the vital necessity of his task: 'if steps be not taken for our defence … the useful wealth of China will be poured into the fathomless abyss of transmarine regions.'[42] Looking back at previous efforts to curb the trade, Lin expected the British to back down once more, accepting the logic of the argument that this was an illegal and noxious trade. In a draft letter to Queen Victoria that was ultimately never sent, Lin laid out what for him was an obvious truth about opium: 'so long as you continue to make it and tempt the people of China to buy it, you will be showing yourselves careful of your own lives, but careless of the lives of other people, indifferent in your greed for gain to the harm you do to others; such conduct is repugnant to human feeling and at variance with the Way of Heaven'.[43] After surrounding the foreign trading quarters in Canton, Lin confiscated 20,283 chests of opium – 7,000 of which belonged to the Firm. After making a sacrifice to the Sea Spirit for what was about to happen, Commissioner Lin ordered that the opium be mixed with lime and washed into the ocean – an act of national resistance celebrated in the Humen museum. But this was not the last of Lin's demands: he also wanted the British to sign a bond pledging not to bring any more opium on pain of death. The Superintendent of Trade, Charles Elliott, privately deplored the opium trade, but could not swallow this acceptance of Chinese sovereignty. In May, unable to sign the bond, a humiliated Elliott withdrew the British merchant community from Canton. For the second time in a century, the calculated abuse of trade rules had forced Asian empires to crack down on British merchants. Just like Roger Drake, the Company's president for Bengal anchored at Fulta in 1756 after the fall of Calcutta to Siraj-ud-Daula, Elliott was forced to languish offshore at nearby Hong Kong.

The reaction of the free traders was one of somewhat staged fury, bitterly denouncing this assault on property when everyone knew that the opium was contraband. Moreover, without any authorisation from London, Elliott had promised the merchants that the British state would provide compensation, potentially totalling £2 million, equivalent to some £137 million in today's prices. Jardine's concern was that Parliament would do nothing, 'pocketing the insult and refusing to pay for the opium'.[44] A sustained lobbying campaign followed, with Jardine persuading the Prime Minister, Lord Palmerston, that intervention was needed to uphold

British honour – and recover the £2 million compensation from the Chinese. The onset of the first Opium War was not plain sailing for the Firm, however. In Parliament, the future Prime Minister William Ewart Gladstone denounced the opium trade as unjust, a crime that would bring 'permanent disgrace' on Britain. Translating the situation into imagery that the British could understand, Williams Storr Fry, a leading Quaker and cocoa magnate, suggested that the situation was comparable to Britain deciding to ban the import of wine for health reasons, and the French responding by bribing the British customs authorities to smuggle in contraband wine, and when intercepted, employing armed vessels to fight their way in.[45]

The expeditionary force included the iron-clad steamer appropriately named the *Nemesis*, which destroyed the Chinese war-fleet with its Congreve rockets. After two years of coastal warfare, the Chinese were bombarded into submission. In August 1842, the Treaty of Nanjing forced China to hand over Hong Kong island 'in perpetuity', and open the five ports of Canton, Xiamen, Fuzhou, Ningbo and Shanghai to British trade. These traders were to be subject to British law, and the ancient *co-hong* monopoly was abolished. Finally, an indemnity of 21 million dollars was paid: 6 million for the opium, 3 million to pay off *co-hong* debts and 12 million to cover the cost of the war.[46]

The Company had taken a backseat role in the whole affair: enforcing the monopoly production of opium in India, and providing military support, sending four armed steamers, the 49th Bengal Volunteers, a corps of Bengal engineers and a corps of Madras sappers to join the British forces. Its one concern had been to ensure that it didn't have to pick up the tab for the war. Jardines, however, had been pivotal, supplying vital intelligence and also leasing their well-armed but idle opium ships to the Royal Navy to bolster the invasion force. When the war was won, a grateful Palmerston wrote to Jardine's agent, John Abel Smith, that 'it was mainly owing' to the 'assistance that you and Mr Jardine so handsomely afforded us' that 'these satisfactory results' were achieved, bringing 'the most important advantages to the commercial interests of England'.[47] Others were less fulsome, including the up-and-coming writer and future Conservative Prime Minister, Benjamin Disraeli, who lampooned Jardine in his 1845 novel, *Sybil*, as 'a dreadful man! A Scotchman richer than Croesus, one McDruggy fresh from Canton, with a million of opium in each pocket, denouncing corruption and bellowing free trade.'[48]

The Company may have been stripped of its rights to trade, but it maintained its covetous approach towards opium. The Chinese had refused to legalise opium as part of the Treaty of Nanjing, and the British authorities temporarily banned its traffic at Hong Kong. Matheson was unmoved, however, viewing the proclamation as 'meaning nothing', while the Company's Governor-General in India, Lord Ellenborough, remonstrated that 'Her Majesty's Government should do nothing to place in peril our Opium Revenue.'[49] Back in India, in spite of its control over the Maratha lands, non-Company opium was still reaching China via the ports of Sind. Following the humiliating retreat from Afghanistan in 1841, Ellenborough sought to restore the reputation of the *Company Bahadur* ('Brave Company') through a more convenient invasion. The conquest of Sind in 1843 went ahead on the flimsiest of grounds, an act of aggression described by the social reformer Lord Ashley as a 'foul stain' on the nation's honour.[50] *Punch* magazine tried to satirise the crime with its conqueror Major-General Sir Charles Napier exclaiming, 'Peccavi' – Latin for 'I have sinned'. To this day, Napier's triumphant statue stands in London's Trafalgar Square. With Sind in its possession, the Company had complete control of India's opium outlets, and could have decided to retrench and cut production. Instead it used its dominance to raise the duty on opium exports from Bombay from £12 to £40 in 1847.

As for tea, the Company had long aspired to break China's monopoly by encouraging production in its Indian acquisitions. One of the consolation prizes of Macartney's ill-fated expedition was a gift of some tea seeds, which were successfully germinated at the Company's botanical gardens in Calcutta. But it was not until the loss of the monopoly in 1834 that the Company moved from gentlemanly collecting to aggressive development. A Tea Committee was established to import seeds from China and find appropriate land in India for cultivation. In the recently annexed territory of Assam in the north-east, the Committee located some indigenous tea plants, and declared that 'we have no hesitation in declaring this discovery to be by far the most important and valuable that has ever been made on matters connected with the agricultural or commercial resources of this empire'.[51] On 10 January 1839, two days after Commissioner Lin had set out from Beijing to close down Canton's drug trade, the Company's first batch of Indian tea was auctioned in London. A new joint stock corporation, the Assam Company, was soon launched with capital of £500,000. But the Company still needed the seeds and expertise of China if

production was to flourish. The opening up of the five new treaty ports gave it a base in China from which to acquire the materials it needed. In what would today be described as bio-piracy, the Company commissioned Robert Fortune to bring back thousands of plants and seeds for its budding Indian plantations. Knowing that the Emperor 'prevented foreigners from visiting any of the districts where tea is cultivated', Fortune disguised himself as a local, getting the distinctive male queue sewn into his hair.[52] No Company employee had ever reached the tea gardens and factories, and before Fortune, the Company had believed that green and black teas came from different plants. By getting inside a tea factory for the first time, Fortune was able to reveal that the difference lay in the fact that black tea was fermented. He also exposed the reality that half a pound of plaster and cyanide was included in every 100 lb of tea – not to poison the foreign barbarians but to dye the tea a more distinctive green. But Fortune's real triumph was the successful transportation of thousands of germinating black tea seeds from Bohea back to Calcutta. Replanted in the Company's Himalayan territories, these seedlings provided the basis for a new industry that would soon 'outstrip China's in quality, volume and price', according to Sarah Rose who has retraced Fortune's journey. For her, what the Company had engineered was 'the greatest theft of trade secrets in the history of mankind.'[53]

The first Opium War may have opened the door wider into China – letting in adventurers such as Robert Fortune – but it solved nothing. Expectations of increasing British exports into China had failed to materialise, and the Qing refused to revise the provisions of the 1842 treaty. Its attention was diverted by the anti-Manchu Taiping rebellion that had broken out in 1850; over the next 15 years tens of millions would be killed in the revolt. With China convulsed by civil war, the British found an opportunity to reopen hostilities and resolve the issues left open at Nanjing. Gunboats were sent in once more, and the British government despatched another punitive force. But when it reached Singapore in June 1857, terrible news was waiting: the Company's sepoys had mutinied across northern India. The bulk of the force heading for China was diverted immediately to Calcutta to help defeat the mutineers. In a powerful symbol of the end of a commercial era, as the Company fought for its survival in India, the factories that had housed foreign merchants for over a century in Canton were burnt to the ground in December 1857. By the time the second opium war was over in October 1860, opium legalised and Beijing's Summer Palace looted

of its treasures, the Company's presence in Asia was no more. For Marx, writing in the *New York Daily Tribune*, the second opium war was driven by an exceptional struggle between 'the Celestial Emperor, [who] in order to check the suicide of his people prohibited at once the import of the poison by the foreigner' and 'the East India Company [who] was rapidly converting the cultivation of opium in India and its contraband sale to China into internal parts of its own financial system'.[54] With his characteristic knack for getting to the nub, Marx revealed the hypocrisy at the heart of British strategy. 'While openly preaching free trade in poison', he wrote, 'it secretly defends the monopoly of its manufacture. Whenever we look closely into the nature of British free trade, monopoly is pretty generally found to lie at the bottom of its "freedom".'[55] Queen Victoria was amongst those who welcomed the victorious troops on their return to Britain in December 1860, and was delighted with her own trophy of the Summer Palace, a Pekinese dog, promptly nicknamed 'Looty', confirming Nehru's much later prison-bound observation about the adoption of Hindustani into the heart of the English language.

DIVERSIFICATION AND DENIAL

The Firm had got its way. Like so many nabobs before them, the duo quickly shook off the murky origins of their wealth and became pillars of the British establishment. Jardine had become a Whig MP in July 1841 in the midst of the first Opium War and bought a country estate at Lanrick in Perthshire. But he died less than a year after the successful conclusion of his masterpiece, the Treaty of Nanjing. Matheson promptly took over Jardine's parliamentary seat at Ashburton, later transferring to represent Ross and Cromarty in Scotland, a more convenient constituency after his purchase of the Hebridean island of Lewis for over half a million pounds in 1844. With no children of his own, James Matheson's interest in the Firm fell to his nephew, Donald. But this second generation Matheson was wracked with doubts over the morality of the opium trade. Donald resigned as a partner in 1849, and for the next half century waged war through his active membership of the Society for the Suppression of the Opium Trade, becoming chairman of the Society in 1892. The Firm itself was also diversifying out of opium. But as Robert Blake, the biographer of Jardine Matheson observes: 'the reason for the Firm's withdrawal from the trade had nothing to do with ethical considerations' rather it was the emergence of

the more formidable competitor in the form of the Bombay-based, David Sassoon.[56] Throughout the nineteenth century, China's addiction to opium deepened, with domestic production adding to the steadily increasing inflows from British India. The pinnacle of the trade was reached in 1879–80, with shipments of 105,000 chests, four times the size at the end of the Company's China trade in 1833. But revenues had already peaked in 1871–2, and then fell by three-quarters by the end of the century. Opium had served its purpose in terms of being the vanguard of Britain's commercial interests, and in 1895, 80 per cent of the external trade of China was with the British Empire.[57] Only in 1907 did Britain finally agree to stop the export of Indian opium, and in 1911, its cultivation was abandoned in Bihar as a result of the 'loss of the Chinese market'. But the government monopoly of opium production for medicinal purposes continues unbroken in independent India, with the state-run Opium and Alkaloid Works occupying the same site in Ghazipur established by the East India Company almost two centuries ago in 1820.

For China's modern authorities, the opium saga has a two-edged meaning, marking both the beginning of 'a century of national humiliation' at the hands of foreign imperialists, and also the first example of the Chinese people's patriotic resistance, culminating in the Communist revolution of 1949. Amidst the capitalist success of today's Pearl River delta, the Opium Wars are powerfully memorialised in a string of state-sanctioned monuments and museums. In Humen, a huge opium pipe stands broken in two in the town's central square. Further on stands the Sea Battle Museum and the old fortress of Shajio Paotai where children scramble on the ancient cannon in the shade of the sprawling banyan trees. After the huge displays depicting Commissioner Lin directing the destruction of the Company's opium in 1839, the Humen Opium War Museum concludes that this act of defiance 'dispelled Chinese humiliation' and 'unveiled Chinese modern history'. This is state-directed messaging, and the museum is managed by an 'advanced unit in National Patriotic Education' part of the publicity department of the Communist Party's Central Committee.[58] For historian Julia Lovell, 'one of the reasons that the regime draws so much attention to the 'century of humiliation' is that it dreads the Chinese remembering the man-made disasters of the Maoist period'.[59]

While the opium wars are actively deployed to fight modern political battles in China, elsewhere they remain almost invisible. Celebrating its 175-year history in 2007, Jardines praised the way

the two founders 'built strong relationships in business that set the standards which subsequent generations were to follow'. But only one passive reference was made to the drug on which the business was built: 'during the mid 1800s, tea, silks, cotton and opium were traded through different firms along the vast trade routes between China, India and Britain … The times were tough and the competition was fierce'.[60] Opium might have disappeared from Jardine Matheson's contemporary public image, but the Firm remains one of the clearest corporate links with the dying days of the East India Company.

9
A Skulking Power

TAMING THE TIGER

The whitewashed ramparts of Fort St George now serve a purely symbolic purpose, vainly keeping out the twenty-first century from the military and government offices that lie within its walls. The bastion of the main entrance resembles the prow of some enormous ocean-going vessel, with its 150-foot flagstaff imitating the original mast that had been erected by Elihu Yale in the 1680s to fly the St George's Cross. As the location of the Company's first major trading hub in India, Madras was the site for a century of largely consensual commerce with local rulers. It was here that Elihu Yale made the fortune that would endow his college back in New Haven, Connecticut, and here that Thomas Pitt acquired the diamond that would finance his political dynasty.

This all changed in the 1740s with the irruption of world war onto Indian soil. The first battles between British and French interests were fought up and down the short stretch of Coromandel coastline that separates Madras from Pondicherry. In the first exchange, during the Austrian War of Succession, French forces breached the walls in 1746 and occupied Fort St George for three years, pushing the Company's traders (including Robert Clive) south to Fort St David in Cuddalore. But Madras was restored to the Company when the war ended in Europe. A decade later, in 1761, it was the Company's turn to conquer Pondicherry, but it also had to hand it back two years later as part of the Treaty of Paris which ended the Seven Years War. What remained, however, was the Company's total domination over the neighbouring nawab of Arcot. Along with commerce and conquest, the Company's executives discovered a third route to personal riches: credit. Under the cover of Company control, ever-more grandiose loans at usurious rates were provided to the 'nabob' to sustain 'a large undisciplined army for the mere indulgence of idle parade' in the words of his chief creditor, Paul Benfield.[1] As we have seen, for the next half century, the 'nabob of Arcot's debts' became an enduring symbol of the Company's corruption. Privately contracted but publicly enforced, these debts

could only be collected through a combination of extortionate taxes on the people of Arcot and aggression against local states. In March 1769, the Directors in London wrote to the Council in Madras expressing 'great surprize' that the Company had been 'plunged into a war to put him [the nawab of Arcot] in possession of the Mysore revenues for the discharge of the debt'.[2] The strategy backfired and Sultan Hyder Ali's forces came to the walls of Madras, news of which precipitated the bursting of the 'Bengal bubble' on the London markets. This was just the first of four wars between the Company and Mysore, defining much of the Company's imperial strategy following the acquisition of Bengal's *diwani* in 1765.

A new set of global factors in the form of the American War of Independence prompted the second conflict in 1780, when Hyder Ali supported the French as part of the anti-British coalition. Hyder Ali once more invaded the Madras Presidency and at Pollilur in September 1780, Mysore smashed the Company's forces. For Britain, Pollilur was just the beginning of a year of military reverses, with the pivotal surrender of Yorktown by Lord Cornwallis following in October 1781. But as far as the Company was concerned, defeat in America ultimately brought relief in India, though only 1,300 of the 10,000 troops captured at Pollilur would survive to be handed over in 1784. With insufficient naval forces of his own and unreliable support from the French, Hyder Ali was unable to drive the Company out of Madras, lamenting that 'I can defeat them on land, but I cannot swallow the sea'.[3]

It was Hyder's son, Tipu, known as the Tiger, who became the real 'terror of Leadenhall Street'. Fondly seen by subsequent nationalists as a modernising Indian ruler, Tipu sought to match the Company's institutional and technological advantages by investing heavily in agricultural improvement and naval expansion. He also built on his father's diplomatic connections to construct an alliance with revolutionary France, earning the title of 'Citizen Tipu' in the process. But in 1792, Tipu was forced to surrender half his kingdom to the one-time failure of Yorktown, Charles Cornwallis, who had become Governor-General of India in 1785. Once more, Tipu allied himself with France, trusting that Napoleon's invasion of Egypt in 1798 would open the way for the expulsion of the British from India. Nelson's victory at the Battle of the Nile dashed these hopes, and in May 1799, Tipu died in his capital of Seringapatam as the Company's troops under Richard Wellesley, Lord Mornington, overwhelmed the city. Madras was finally safe from external threats.

The Company's victory over Mysore in 1799 marked more than just the defeat of another local rival. It also marked the passing of the age of merchants. The Company's outward appearance might have looked mightier than ever, with unprecedented trade, revenues and military might. Yet as a free-standing commercial corporation, the Company's trajectory was remorselessly downhill, so that it became little more than an implementing agency for imperial expansion, its commercial character peeled away until it traded in little but paper.

PURGING THE STAIN OF IMMORALITY

Military victory alone was insufficient to restore British fortunes in India. A new regime had to be introduced to confront the extreme oddities created by a shareholder-owned corporation ruling over tens of millions of people. The reforms of the 1770s and 1780s had punctured the Company's autonomy as a business, and the 1784 India Act had introduced a two-tier system – a 'double government' – with the Company maintaining a façade of authority, behind which the state pulled the strings through the Board of Control. Where Burke was all passion and principle, the Tory duo of Pitt and Dundas were single-minded in their utterly pragmatic pursuit of power. The fish was now hooked, and successive Whitehall ministers would reel in the Company's remaining privileges one by one until it was a mere corporate husk.

Dundas dominated the new Board and the tool he deployed to engineer this regime-change was Charles, Lord Cornwallis, who took over as Governor-General of Bengal in 1786. Having been a part of the loss of the American colonies across the Atlantic, Cornwallis's task was to secure the empire in the East. He could not have been more different from his predecessor, Hastings. Educated at Eton and Cambridge, he had made his career as an imperial warrior, fighting in Europe before his defeat in America at Yorktown. By class, Cornwallis was a landed aristocrat with extensive estates in Suffolk. He had no experience of commerce, and harboured an entrenched distaste for trade, describing the Company's establishment in India as 'a system of the dirtiest jobbing'.[4] What he found when he arrived in Bengal was an empty treasury and an economy scarred by famine and rebellion. Over the next decade, Cornwallis' response would be to insulate Company rule from the corrupting influences of trade and indeed from India

itself in the vain hope that this would restore financial health for both the British state and the Company's shareholders.

One of Cornwallis's key decisions was to separate the Company's civil and commercial branches to put a stop to the structural embezzlement of corporate revenues. In Madras, Paul Benfield was finally dismissed from the Company's service and expelled from India. More profoundly still, Cornwallis decided to banish Indians from the Company's administrative machine. Unlike generations of Company merchants who had intermingled with local society, Cornwallis declared that 'every native of India, I verily believe, is corrupt'.[5] In 1791, he ordered that 'no person, the son of a Native Indian, shall henceforward be appointed by this Court to Employment in the Civil, Military, or Marine Service of the Company'. As part of this, Cornwallis abolished the historic Mughal office of *qanungu*, the 'speaker of regulations', who oversaw the administration of land revenues, to be replaced by a network of British district collectors.

Equally profound was Cornwallis's 'permanent settlement' of tax collection in Bengal, introduced to resolve the Company's continuing financial crisis once and for all. Taxes had certainly risen under Company rule in Bengal. One estimate suggests that the annual taxes collected in Bengal during Mir Kasim's reign in the early 1760s amounted to about £646,000 growing to £1,470,000 in the first year of the Company's *diwani*. During the 1770s, the collection had advanced to £2,577,000 and by 1790–1 to £2,680,000, a four-fold increase in 30 years.[6] But the Company was constantly adjusting the tax system as it struggled to understand the conditions on the ground. Starting with Philip Francis, a growing number within the Company believed that the only way to resolve the situation was to fix the system of tax collection in perpetuity. In a case of tragic misperception, the Company's analysts came to see the *zamindari* class of Mughal tax-farmers as equivalent to the propertied landed gentry of England, with the *ryots* as their tenants. But self-interest was at work as well. The Company wanted to build up a political class of landholders who would support their presence. In place of complex systems of ownership, with intersecting rights and responsibilities, Cornwallis introduced an essentially English model of landholding, the system from which he had benefitted handsomely back home.

For Cornwallis, this 'permanent settlement' was 'the only effectual mode to render the proprietors of the lands economical landlords and the prudent trustees of the public interest'.[7] And so on 22

March 1793, a proclamation was made fixing the *jumma* at £3 million 'for ever'. For this, Bengal's peasantry were sacrificed in the same way as the rights of England's commoners had been crushed by the enclosure movement.[8] The *zamindars* were given exclusive rights over their lands and, in Ranajit Guha's phrase, a 'rule of property' was introduced.[9] According to John Capper, writing in the 1850s, the result was that '20 million small landholders were dispossessed of their rights, and handed over, bound hand and foot to the tender mercies of a set of exacting rack-renters'.[10] From an imperial perspective, this was Cornwallis's greatest achievement – absorbing the Company's territories in Bengal into a legal and administrative system that was fully aligned to the wider needs of the British Empire. Almost a century later, the one-time Company executive, John Stuart Mill, would write that this blind application of a foreign system of economic management had resulted in 'one of the greatest social revolutions ever effected in a country' turning peasant proprietors into mere tenants.[11] The great paradox of Cornwallis's ultimately doomed attempt to fix a dynamic economic system in stone was that nine out of Bengal's 12 'great *zamindaris*' were dismembered as lands were ruthlessly auctioned off to satisfy the Company's inflexible tax demands.[12] Over 163,000 lawsuits over arrears remained outstanding in 1812.

On his return to England in 1793, the grateful merchants of London made Cornwallis an honorary freeman of the City, awarding him a gold medal in a gilded box. After the chaos of Clive and the half-measures of Hastings, Cornwallis's rule as Governor-General became the foundation stone for a new imperial mythology of dispassionate and incorruptible service. At the heart of Cornwallis's place in the imperial pantheon was his role in suppressing one of the last spasms of Madras's 'old corruption': the case of Avadhanum Paupiah. Paupiah was a Telugu brahmin who had become a *dubash* (translator/agent, it literally means 'two languages') to two rising stars of the Madras Presidency, John and Edward J. Holland in the 1780s. Under Cornwallis, John Holland became Governor for a year in 1789, followed by his brother for just a week in February 1790, and both became notorious for their corruption. One person stood in their way, David Haliburton, a senior merchant of 20 years standing, the Company's Persian translator and, crucially, a member of the board of revenue, giving him a position to thwart the Hollands's plans to manipulate the tax system for their private benefit. To get him out of the way, the Hollands and Paupiah fabricated an elaborate plot to charge Haliburton with bribery and

formenting rebellion. But Haliburton did not go quietly, and when the plot was discovered, the Hollands fled back to England. For Cornwallis, the case was just another example of the rotten model of governance he had been sent to cleanse. Writing to Dundas on the last day of 1790, Cornwallis argued that 'the whole system of this Presidency is founded on the good old principles of Leadenhall-street economy – small salaries and immense perquisites, and if the Directors alone could be ruined by it, everybody would say they deserved it, but unfortunately it is not the Court of Directors but the British nation who must be the sufferers.'[13] Paupiah, however, was arrested with his accomplices and charged with conspiracy. An all British jury convicted him in July 1792 and the judge sentenced Paupiah to jail for three years along with a fine of £2,000; until the fine was paid he was to stand in the pillory for an hour.

Haliburton did not let the matter rest there. With the help of his relative, the young and then unpublished novelist, Walter Scott, Haliburton printed *The Trial of Avadaunum Paupiah*, in order 'to guard all persons who may hereafter hold high and responsible situations under the honourable company against the wily wickedness of *dubashes*' and, more broadly, against 'the unprincipled audacity of the natives of India'.[14] Two decades later, Scott would recycle the material and immortalise Paupiah in his book, *The Surgeon's Daughter*, as 'the master counselor of dark projects, an Oriental Machiavel, whose premature wrinkles were the result of many an intrigue without scruples, to attain political or private advantage'.[15] In nineteenth-century Britain, Scott's characterisation of Paupiah exemplified the inherently untrustworthy Asiatic who needed to be distanced – as Cornwallis had done – if sound government was ever to be achieved. Cornwallis died on duty in Ghazipur in 1805 during his second tour as Governor-General, and a handsome monument was placed at the heart of St Paul's Cathedral, depicting the imperial warrior with a stern armed Britannia by his side, and a grieving Indian widow and downcast Hindu *sadhu* at his feet. Speaking at the monument's blessing, Dean Milman of St Paul's lauded how Cornwallis 'strove to rule India not as a conquered country but for the benefit of our subjects', labouring all the time 'with primitive wisdom to repress the dominant grasping rapacity and insolent contempt of our native subjects'.[16] By the time that the great imperial historian, John Seeley, was writing in 1883, the mythology of Cornwallis was complete. For Seeley, Burke had achieved 'immortal glory' for revealing the dangers of the Company system under Hastings. But it was under the rule of Cornwallis

that 'the stain of immorality *did* pass away as if by magic from the administration of the Company'.[17]

While Cornwallis was overturning Bengal's landed structure, in the imperial metropolis Henry Dundas was focusing on the Company's trading operations. From the dire days of bailiffs and plummeting share prices, its finances showed strong signs of recovery in the 1780s and 1790s. The Company's capital stock was increased for the first time since 1709, first with an injection of £800,000 at £155 in 1786 and then another £1,000,000 at £174 in 1789. This took the paid-in capital to £5 million. And, in February 1792, the Company shares hit £200 for the first time since 1770. When its charter came up for renewal in 1793, the Company came under attack from Britain's rising industrial interest, who saw its monopoly as a major barrier to successful export to Asia. Ever the pragmatist, Dundas recognised that the Company's import monopoly was still essential as a means of returning tribute. But its right of exclusive export no longer served the national interest. Sweetening the pill for the Company and its shareholders by supporting an increase of its guaranteed dividend from 8 to 10 per cent, Dundas breached its monopoly by requiring the Company to offer at least 3,000 tonnes a year to private exporters, around one-third of the total. 'My plan is to engraft an open trade upon the exclusive privilege of the Company,' he told the House of Commons.[18] By the end of the decade, private trade would represent over 40 per cent of Bengal's total imports and exports, perforating the Company's monopoly. The 1793 Charter Act also underscored the profound shift in both financial power between state and corporation since the 1770s. Where once the Crown had relied on capital from the Company, now it was the Company who could not survive without government support for its increasingly expensive military-corporate complex in India. Technically, the government still owed the Company £4.2 million in loans incurred since the previous century. These were written off in 1793 and the Company was authorised to increase its capital stock by another £1,000,000, taking it to £6 million. Dundas's behind-the-scenes role was formalised with the creation of a new post of President of the Board of Control, and he would match the freeing up of trade in Asian commodities with the insertion of open competition into the chartering of the Company's fleet.

War had broken out with France, and the 1793 Act passed through Parliament almost unnoticed. From the back-benches, Philip Francis was one of the few MPs either to bother with the proceedings or to

recognise their importance, accusing his old foe Dundas of 'holding up the name of the Company as a mask and a stalking horse to shelter the operation of a real power which skulks behind it'.[19] With the dividend secure, the Company turned its attentions to the important task of building a new headquarters on Leadenhall Street that matched its undisputed role as the mercantile ruler of India.

Illustration 9.1 Unknown, *East India House*, constructed 1796–1799

THE MALABAR ITCH

Cornwallis was the first in a succession of soldier aristocrats who drove the Company's operations in India. Clive and Hastings had shown how the successful deployment of the Company's private army could reap corporate and private benefits – additional taxes for the Company's exchequer and the spoils of war for the officer class. Between 1763 and 1805, the Company's army had grown almost ten-fold from 18,000 to 154,500, far beyond the needs of self-defence. This created a powerful dynamic in favour of further aggression. Indeed, with the end of the private trade era, military adventurism was the only avenue left open for aspiring individuals to make their fortune in India. Nominally, this was at odds with the legal requirements of the 1784 East India Act which had ruled that 'to pursue schemes of conquest and extension of dominion in India are measures repugnant to the wish, the honour and policy of this nation'. But after Cornwallis's relatively restrained administration,

the reopening of conflict with France gave a perfect cover for a new phase of aggression under Richard Wellesley, the Governor-General from 1798 to 1805.

In south-west India, Wellesley brought the 30-year conflict with Mysore to a crushing close. In May 1799, Seringapatam was finally sacked and Tipu killed. Writing in triumph to Dundas at the Board of Control, Wellesley hoped that his conquest would 'enable me to gratify your voracious appetite for lands and fortresses'.[20] The booty for the victorious Company forces was immense, and Seringapatam's treasures were scattered across the museums and country houses of England. The loot included Tipu's infamous 'Man-Tyger-Organ', a life-size model of a tiger chewing out the neck of a Company soldier, which growled when wound up. This was shipped back to the Company's own in-house museum of oriental curiosities on Leadenhall Street, and later transferred across London to where it now stands on display at the Victoria and Albert Museum.

Conquest also provided the Company with the opportunity to deploy its well-tried techniques of monopoly extraction in new territories. Malabar's experience highlights the economic trauma so often brought by Company rule. Land taxes were tightened, and monopolies introduced over the production and sale of salt, tobacco and timber – the latter to secure a vital supply of teak for the Royal Navy in the war against Napoleon.[21] The Company also established a massive 1,000-acre spice plantation at Anjarakandi to produce cinnamon, coffee, pepper and nutmeg. But the land for the plantation was usurped, and its labourers effectively kidnapped to work as little more than slaves. Children were taken from their families in the middle of the night, with clothes stuffed in their mouths to keep them quiet and all caste marks removed.[22] Not surprisingly, perhaps, the local people refused to sell pepper vines to the new plantation manager, Murdoch Brown, to stock his spice garden. But this was only the beginning of the backlash.

In the first decade of Company rule, Malabar rose up twice in rebellion, led by a local nobleman, the Pazhassi Rajah. The Anjarakandi plantation was a particular focus of hatred and was laid waste by the rebels. Avoiding open combat with the Company's troops, the Pazhassi Rajah took to the Wynad jungles and waged guerrilla war. The younger brother of the Governor-General, Arthur Wellesley, commanded the Company's troops in the area and responded with terror. 'The more deserted villages you burn and the more cattle and other property that are carried off the better', Wellesley wrote to one of his officers, adding to another that 'the

people of Malabar are not to be coaxed into submission: terror, however, will induce them to give up their arms'.[23] The Company's remorseless tactics bore fruit and in 1805, the Pazhassi Rajah was eventually surrounded in the hills. Local tradition tells that he then committed suicide by swallowing an immense diamond.

As Company rule became entrenched, the situation of the local people deteriorated sharply. In 1819, the inhabitants of Kadatanad petitioned the Company to relieve the burden of tax and other oppressions.

> Instances have occurred [they wrote] of some respectable persons having put a voluntary end to their life, so as not to survive the cruel necessity of not being able to afford relief to their dying children. Neither in the time of the Rajahs nor Tippoo, have our ancestors and ourselves experienced such grievances and been reduced to such cruel necessities. We are no longer able to endure them.[24]

In the hills, low-level conflict continued for decades as the Kurichiar tribals resisted Company attempts to stop their practices of shifting cultivation. For his pains, Wellesley picked up the 'Malabar itch', a virulent skin infection that proved resistant to the normal lard and sulphur treatment, and could only be removed by frequent baths in diluted nitric acid.[25] Wellesley would later be known as the 'sepoy general' for his Indian exploits, winning the title Duke of Wellington for his wars against Napoleon. The Anjarakandi estate still operates more than 200 years on, a prototype for the plantation economy that came to dominate the hills of Kerala in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries.

Governor-General Wellesley would next turn his attention to the Marathas, winning Agra, Delhi and Gujarat in 1803; conflict with the confederation would only be conclusively resolved in 1818. In the process, however, he consumed £2.5 million in bullion shipped to India by the Company to pay for its trading operations, and plunged the Company once more into chronic deficit. Wellesley also resorted to local bond issues at between 5 and 12 per cent to pay for his wars: in this way his conquests relied not just on Indian soliders, but also on Indian capital. The Company's debts soared from just £9 million in 1792 to £30 million in 1809, adding the extra burden of interest repayment to the load that the Indian taxpayer had to support. But Wellesley outlasted both Dundas and Pitt, returning to Britain as a hero in 1805, escaping Parliamentary censure as

Clive had before him. The facts spoke for themselves. At the end of Cornwallis's first administration, the Company was still essentially a coastal power, controlling just 388,500 km^2 of land out of a possible 4.17 million. To this, Wellesley had added another 50,000 km^2 in each of his seven years in office.[26] This impulse for invasion would remain primary throughout the first half of the nineteenth century. Military action had become 'the master, not the servant of business opportunity'.[27] Not only did this breach the terms of the 1784 Act, but broke just about every treaty with Indian rulers, causing immense human suffering in the process. Unable and unwilling to stop the slide, the directors were simply guilty of 'cant and whining about the accession of territory', wrote Randle Jackson and Joseph Hume in February 1819, adding that 'the regular system for the last thirty to forty years has been to lament deeply over the act and to pocket the income'.[28] Wars large and small continued to be the focus of attention for the next 40 years from Afghanistan, Punjab and Sind in the west to Nepal and Burma in the north and east.

THE DHAKA EARTHQUAKE

The decade-long war with France that followed the 1793 charter severely disrupted the Company's operations, depressing trade and playing havoc with its finances. In the City of London, its share price languished long after the Battle of Waterloo had decided the contest, and only exceeded £200 with any confidence from 1817 onwards. By then, the Company's 200-year monopoly of trade with India had been broken. Industrial interests had forced the initial breach in 1793, and by the time the Company's 20-year charter came up for review once more in 1813, they had gathered sufficient strength to open the Indian trade to all.

Throughout the eighteenth century, the competitiveness of Indian textiles had prompted the introduction of extensive protectionist barriers in England to protect domestic producers. It was behind these walls that Britain's infant textile sector could grow, responding to India's entrenched labour cost advantage with mechanisation. This early modern strategy of import-substitution proved remarkably successful. Imitation 'calicoes' were manufactured in Britain from the early 1770s, and in 1781, mass production of British 'muslins' commenced. Only five years later, the first Lancashire cottons were being exported to India, a small fraction of the 500,000 pieces of industrial muslin being churned out annually. Industrial muscle had

done the job: by 1793, a Lancashire mill operative had become 400 times more productive than the average Indian weaver.

In the run-up to the 1793 charter renewal, Manchester cotton manufacturers had petitioned the government that their goods should be received duty-free in India, while the wearing of Indian cottons should be banned in Britain. The government sensibly rejected this self-serving nonsense – for the time being. Underneath the surface, however, the Company's well-established import–export business was being eaten away. Mill-made cottons took increasing slices of the Company's market share of textiles in both Britain and its key re-export markets in Africa. Simultaneously, Napoleon's 'continental system' had eliminated the important re-export trade with the rest of Europe. From £3 million worth of Indian textiles brought back to England in 1798, the Company imported just £433,000 in 1807. Worse still, the goods it did import could no longer be sold at a profit, resulting in over £7 million of unwanted Bengal cottons piling up in the Company's London warehouses. This time the government could not ignore the mass of petitions that flooded into Westminster calling for an end to the Company's exclusive position. In addition, mounting Indian debts forced the Company to request a loan of £2,500,000 from the government in April 1812. This combination of industrial lobbying and financial distress left the Company in no position to resist the push for greater liberalisation. As a result, its commercial monopoly was removed for all except the China trade, which was extended for another 20 years. For many, notably the evangelical William Wilberforce, trade was no longer the main issue where the Company was concerned, but rather the promotion of Christianity. After years of campaigning, Wilberforce and others managed to include in the 1813 Charter Act provisions for the establishment of a Church of England bishopric in India, as well as the removal of the Company's longstanding ban on missionary activity.

As Smith had predicted, the Company was soon unable to compete against the surge of new entrepreneurs, and it ceased exporting merchandise to India in 1824, largely because there was little it could buy in India for sale back in Britain. The loss of the India trade marked the pinnacle of the Company's commercial operations, with sales at auction yielding over £8 million in 1814, four times the level in 1757. Thereafter, sales steadily declined to less than £4 million in 1833.[29] For India's producers, this so-called opening of trade brought little relief. In the wake of the Bengal Revolution, the East India Company had used its political position

to establish monopoly control over Bengal's weavers. Its hunger for the weavers' output was still as strong, if not stronger, than ever before as it looked for new ways of returning the wealth of Bengal to Britain through increased exports of cloth. Exploitation certainly followed in the most cruel form, and for the weavers the result was dislocation and impoverishment. Paradoxically, however, it was the end of the Company's trading monopoly in 1813 that would turn this terrible situation into one of complete destitution. A 20 per cent increase in import duties on Indian goods was added in 1813 to ensure that open competition did not challenge the British producer. This took the tariff wall to a huge 78 per cent on calicoes and 31 per cent on muslins. 'Had not such prohibitory duties and decrees existed,' wrote Henry Wilson in 1858, 'the mills of Paisley and Manchester would have stopped in their outset and could scarcely have been set in motion, even by the powers of steam.'[30] In place of its earlier position as the monopoly purchaser of Indian cloth, the Company's new role was simply to prevent the introduction of any countervailing measures to 'level the playing field'.

The earthquake that struck Dhaka in 1812 – demolishing the Company's agency building in Tejgaon – was only a portent of a far more savage economic disaster that was about to strike. In 1753, just before Plassey, Dhaka exported Rs2,850,000 in textiles to Britain; by the end of the century, this had already fallen to Rs1,362,000. But it took only four years following the removal of the Company's monopoly for exports to cease altogether, and in 1818, the Company's cloth 'factory' at Dhaka was wound up. The city imploded upon itself, and by 1840, its population had fallen from 150,000 to just 20,000, with jungle and malaria 'fast encroaching upon the town'. Once again, horrific acts of mutilation are said to have accompanied this upheaval. In a grisly repeat of earlier cruelties, when machine-made yarns were first introduced into Dhaka in 1821, the 'thumb and index finger of some of the renowned artisans began to be chopped off in order to disable them from twisting finer yarns', according to Syed Muhammed Taifoor.[31] Taifoor adds that some reputed artisans also 'chopped off their own finger-ends in order to avoid the tyranny of the middlemen'.

Until 1813, India had a strongly positive balance of trade, operating as it had done for centuries as 'the great workshop of cotton manufacture for the world'.[32] But in the next 20 years, exports to India of British cotton rose more than fifty-fold, while textile imports from India fell by three-quarters. The deliberate manipulation of trade and industrial policy resulted in the

elimination of India's handloom weavers; English weavers were also being driven to extinction by the same remorseless forces. In India, the Company's role was simply passive – to observe, but to do nothing. By 1834, the Governor-General, William Bentinck, was reporting that 'the misery hardly finds parallel in the history of commerce', adding that 'the bones of the cotton-weavers are bleaching the plains of India'.[33]

This was not the free trade that Adam Smith had called for – even though his name was invoked repeatedly by the mill-owners in their quest to dominate India's markets. Indeed, the Company itself recognised in 1840 that it had 'in various ways, encouraged and assisted by our great manufacturing ingenuity and skill, succeeded in converting India from a manufacturing country into a country exporting raw produce'.[34] Observing what Britain did rather than what its philosophers wrote, the German economist Friedrich List cited the cotton trade as a case study of the successful use of protectionism to build up national industrial strength.[35]

A CORPORATE ANOMALY

By the early 1830s, it had become a foregone conclusion that the Company would be stripped of its remaining monopoly privileges in China: in 1829–30, 257 free trade petitions were presented to Parliament, almost double the amount during the 1813 charter debates. Sensing that the end was near, the Company decided in 1825 to award only short-term shipping contracts. The real issue was whether the Company should retain its status as the licensed administrator of India. More and more, its position seemed out of step with the spirit of the age. Somewhat unwisely, the Company confirmed its reputation as a leftover of the past by joining a petition of merchants and bankers opposed to the Reform Bill of 1832, which was designed to increase the proportion of the population entitled to vote. Company supporters had usually entered Parliament by purchasing seats in the country's 'rotten boroughs', many of which had now been eliminated in the reforms. When the first general election under new rules took place in December 1832, the representation of Company interests in the House of Commons was cut by half. The risk for the Company was that it would be seen as a 'rotten corporation' that would be abolished just like the 'rotten boroughs' of Parliament. For its shareholders, uncertainty over the Company's future earnings had translated in a precipitate fall in value, from almost £300 in April 1824 to £194 at the beginning of

1832. A resolution to the crisis was needed if for no other reason than to calm the market.

When the debate started on the Company's charter in June 1833, Charles Grant, President of the Board of Control, exuded complacency, asserting 'that the natives of India were in a better situation now than ever they were, with the exception of a single period, under the sway of one Mogul Emperor, whose happy reign was yet a theme of grateful praise'.[36] With a nod to the Company's critics, Grant acknowledged that its rule was 'sluggish, and not calculated to make any great or rapid strides', but quickly added that 'it was such a government as the people required'. Proposing to abolish the Company's China monopoly to enable free trade to flourish, Grant praised the Company as a necessary 'interposition' between Britain and India, and recommended extending the outsourcing of authority from Crown to corporation for a further 20 years.

Few MPs were interested in the debate. But James Silk Buckingham saw through the government's humbug. A well-known travel writer, Buckingham eventually settled in India and established the *Calcutta Journal* in 1818. But his criticisms of the Company's arbitrary rule prompted the Governor-General to close the paper, using the Company's ancient monopoly privileges to expel him as an 'interloper' in 1823. Entering the reformed Parliament as a radical MP for Sheffield in 1832, Buckingham used his first-hand experience to challenge the Company's record. Like William Bolts before him in the 1770s, Buckingham accused the Company of 'a sort of passive resistance to innovation ... when improvement or benefit was to be conferred'. However, Buckingham added, 'if war, or conquest, or spoliation, or plunder, was to be the pursuit, their dormant energies were soon quickened into life – they were not apathetic then; their love of repose and their hostility to change, each disappeared, and they were among the foremost in the activity of their career'. Going to the heart of the matter, Buckingham attacked the 'preposterous' idea that the 100 million inhabitants of the Company's territories should be consigned 'bound hand and foot, to the tender mercies of these Joint-Stock rulers' whose 'only care or anxiety would be to get the dividends on their stock punctually paid'. For him, the solution was clear: 'Let the Company trade if it will, and compete with the private merchant if it likes. Take from it its political character, and leave it to deal with its mercantile affairs, divested of its monopoly, as it should see fit.' And

in an echo of George Dempster's earlier plea for disengagement, Buckingham concluded by suggesting that if the government proved 'incompetent to govern India, or unwilling to incur the trouble, let the possession be given back to its rightful owners'.

The Secretary of the Board of Control, Thomas Babington Macaulay, acknowledged the peculiarity of a situation where a commercial body was 'exercising sovereignty over more people, with a larger revenue and a larger army' than the British state. For him, there was little doubt that 'the Company is an anomaly' and 'part of a system where everything is anomaly'. Ignoring Buckingham's ethical assault, Grant and Macaulay persisted with Dundas's long-standing strategy of operating under the cloak of Company rule, giving the state control without responsibility. Won over by the government's decision to raise the guaranteed dividend from 10 to 10.5 per cent, the Company's shareholders had voted overwhelmingly in favour of commercial surrender on 3 May 1833 by 477 votes to 52. Importantly, both the annual dividend and the interest on the Company's by now extensive debts were to be paid out of the tax revenues of India. In return for surrendering its extensive commercial assets to the state, Parliament pledged to extend the Company's charter for another 20 years and guarantee the dividend for a further 20. Thereafter, each £100 of Company stock would receive a £200 pay-off. With no risk to their earnings, the shareholders of a Company stripped of all commercial purpose would receive a secure annuity for the next four decades.

The Charter Act was passed in August, stating in stark terms that 'the said Company shall, with all convenient speed close their commercial business, and make sale of all their merchandize, stores and effects at home and abroad'. Parliament and not the lingering Mughal empire would henceforth be the basis for British rule in India, with the Company its chosen agent. During the debates, the Company had claimed that its commercial assets were worth £19 million. But set against this were at least £40 million in political, territorial and commercial debts at home and abroad. Establishing the Company's true worth was a nightmarish exercise and, according to the Board of Control, 'the accounts of the Company were of a most complicated and difficult nature, involved in considerable embarrassment'. A forensic analysis by a City accountant found a total deficit of nearly £25 million, leaving 'a balance of legitimate claims which there is nothing whatever in the shape of property to meet', in the words of James Mill, the Company's chief spokesman.

The Blackwell docks were sold off, and the Company's warehouses put up for auction. Two hundred and thirty-three years after starting trading operations, the Company had moved into a twilight existence as the profit-making agent of the British state in India, an early form of public–private partnership. For its shareholders, the decision to exchange its commercial gene for what amounted to a state-backed pension was the right one: shares rose some 30 per cent from the beginning of 1833 to the end of 1834. Buckingham had failed to halt the course of imperial aggrandisement. But later in 1834 he finally won compensation from the Company for his heavy-handed expulsion back in 1823, earning a £500 a year pension for his pains.

AN EMPIRE OF SCORN

The Company had been fortunate that its case before Parliament had been handled by one of the leading intellectuals of the day. James Mill, the Scottish utilitarian activist, had joined the Company in 1819 as an assistant examiner, charged with preparing directives for India. The previous year, Mill had published his immense *History of British India*, whose arguments would come to dominate the Company's thinking, not least as a set text at its in-house training establishment, East India College at Haileybury. Mill had never visited India – indeed, he took some pride in his detachment from his subject-matter. And his analysis took few prisoners. He tore into the corruption and criminality that had underpinned so much of the Company's operations from Clive to Wellesley. He savaged the Company's monopoly status, impatient for the benefits of free trade to be introduced. And he attacked the inequity of the 'permanent settlement', exposing instead the 'permanent deficit' that the Company was running in India.

Most importantly, Mill launched an all-out assault on Hindu civilisation, criticising earlier observers, such as William Jones, for believing that it had a value equal to ancient Greece and Rome. Mill introduced a fundamentally modern perspective, arguing that societies could be graded along a spectrum of social progress. For Mill, there was no doubt that Hindustan languished in a state of utter barbarism. Its history was mere fable, its government despotic, its religion superstition and its caste system fundamentally degraded. According to Mill, Hindus were 'the most enslaved portion of the human race', with a 'general disposition to deceit and perfidy'.[37] In Mill's progressive view of history, Hindu dominance had been replaced by a more advanced Muslim rule and then by modern

British administration. Crucially, Mill argued that Hindu society was incapable of achieving social progress on its own, requiring the helping hand of imperial rule to achieve the greatest happiness of the greatest number. In an earlier review article for the *Edinburgh Review* published in 1810, Mill made his views crystal clear: 'whatever may be our sense of the difficulties into which we have brought ourselves by the improvident assumption of such a dominion, we earnestly hope, for the sake of the natives, that it will not be found necessary to leave them to their own direction'.[38]

Perhaps in an unconscious bid for employment, Mill's views of early nineteenth-century Company were more favourable. 'I know of no government,' he wrote, 'either in past or present times, that can be placed equally high with that of the East India Company', concluding that it deserved 'the highest applause.'[39] In the crisis of the early 1830s, Mill amply repaid the trust that the Company's directors had placed on him, appearing before Parliament on numerous occasions to fight its case. Putting his free trade beliefs to one side, Mill argued that only the principle of *caveat emptor* ('buyer beware') should apply to the opium trade, urging the retention of the Company's monopoly in Bengal as the financial burden fell primarily upon foreign – Chinese – consumers. And when he was questioned by MPs in the newly reformed Parliament about his views on whether some form of democracy should be applied to India as well, he responded firmly that this was 'utterly out of the question', not least because of the 'total absence of moral feeling' in the country.[40]

Through his *History* and his career at East India House, Mill profoundly shaped British views towards India. His intellectual assertion of the superiority of Western modernity was a perfect match for the arrogance of power that the Company increasingly displayed in India. In a warning full of foresight, one of the Company's leading executives, Thomas Munro, Governor of Madras, protested in 1817 against the Company's refusal to employ Indians in all but the most menial positions, arguing that 'there is perhaps no example of any country in which the natives have been so completely excluded from all share of the government of their country as in British India'. For Munro, 'the consequence of the conquest of India by British arms would be, in place of raising, to debase the whole people'.[41] But like Burke's views before him, Munro's concerns were cast aside by those who asserted that Anglo-Saxon values and institutions should prevail. Certainly, there were many aspects of Indian society that needed to be changed, as home-grown reformers such as Ram

Mohun Roy would argue, not least the caste system and practices such as *sati* (widow-burning).

In 1823, James Mill was joined at East India House by his son, James Stuart on the day after his seventeenth birthday. The younger Mill would stay in the Company's service for 35 years as a loyal, if somewhat unconventional, employee. One account describes how 'when particularly inspired, he used, before sitting down to his desk, to not only strip himself of his coat and waistcoat, but of his trousers, and so set to work, alternately striding up and down the room and writing at great speed'.[42] For Mill, the great advantage of a Company career was that it gave him the financial security and the time to pursue his passion for philosophy. Indeed his working day generally lasted from 10 a.m. to 1 p.m., and in his autobiography, Mill described his office duties as 'an actual rest from the other mental occupations which I have carried on simultaneously with them'. As a public intellectual, Mill wrote widely on political and economic issues, but very little about India. What he did express suggests that he saw the Company's rule in India as 'a legitimate mode of government in dealing with barbarians'.[43] Mill is remembered today for his two liberal masterpieces, *On Liberty* and *The Subjection of Women*, both published after his retirement from Company business. A great apostle of liberty in Britain, he upheld the Company's position in India largely because it provided a bulwark against the populism of Parliament. Like a child, India needed to be guided with 'leading strings' by a paternal, but authoritarian British parent.[44] Mill's version of tolerant tyranny came into conflict with the increasingly contemptuous views of the imperial elite. This attitude was perhaps most forcefully expressed by Macaulay in his 1835 Minute on Education, where he held that 'a single shelf of a good European library was worth the whole native literature of India and Arabia'.[45] Macaulay wanted to produce a new class of 'brown sahibs', Indians inculcated with British values, and proposed the abolition of Company subsidies for education in Persian and Sanskrit, and the introduction in their place of English as the language of instruction. Mill, by contrast, favoured the use of local languages, as this would help win the loyalty of the local elite. Overruled by Macaulay, Mill fumed in his third floor office at East India House, furious that his 'cautious and deliberate measures' were upset by 'a coxcombical dilettante litterateur who never did a thing for a practical object in his life'.[46]

Trade had necessitated exchange and interaction, and the removal of the Company's commercial operations contributed to an ever-

increasing distancing until the British had become ‘strangers in the land’ according to Governor-General William Bentinck (1833–35).[47] The disruption that followed the end of monopoly, coupled with cutbacks to its military expenditure, produced considerable deflation in the north Indian economy. Rule by the doctrine of *laissez-faire* might be logical for the enlightened Company administrator. But it dashed the expectations that the local population had of its rulers: ‘*Company kea mal men kuchh rozgar nahin*’ (‘under Company rule, there is no employment’).[48] Domination was increasingly reflected in verbal abuse, with ‘nigger’ becoming a common expression for Indians in the 1840s and 1850s. Social uplift might well have been paraded as the rationale for the Company’s continued presence in India. But the twin pillars of late Company rule remained constant: commercial and military conquest. Technology and trade barriers had transformed India into a vital market for Britain’s industrial output, taking 23 per cent of its cotton exports in 1850, by far the biggest share. In return, de-industrialisation had transformed India into a producer of agricultural inputs for the imperial economy. Before the opening of trade in 1811, textiles had formed the largest part of India’s exports at 33 per cent, followed by opium (24 per cent), indigo (19 per cent), raw silk (8 per cent) and raw cotton (5 per cent). By 1850, however, textile exports had been eliminated, and opium had surged to 30 per cent, followed by cotton (19 per cent), indigo (11 per cent) and sugar (10 per cent).[49] Alongside this, the Company’s ‘permanent deficit’ provided another valuable source of income for imperial Britain as tax revenues were diverted to pay the interest on the ballooning Indian debt, growing from £27 million in 1836 to an immense £51 million in 1857. The Company’s army also played its part, taking the area under British control from just over 7 per cent of the subcontinent at the time of the 1784 East India Act with its nominal ban on expansion to 62 per cent in 1856.

THE LAST CHARTER

When the Company’s charter came up for renewal once more in June 1853, the coalition government of William Gladstone and John Russell aimed to make a few administrative changes and extend a largely satisfactory arrangement for a further 20 years. Presenting his case to Parliament, the President of the Board of Control, Charles Wood, urged his listeners to understand the difficulties Britain faced. ‘In India’, he declared, ‘you have a race of people slow to change, bound up by religious prejudices and antiquated customs. There are

in fact, all obstacles to rapid progress.'[50] To address these obstacles, Wood proposed to cut the number of directors from 24 to 18 and simultaneously raise the director's salary from £300 to £500. For the Young India campaign led by Liberal MPs Richard Cobden and John Bright, the Company's anachronistic position cried out for resolution. The time had come to abolish the Company and refocus British rule from plunder to public works.

Outside Parliament, the charter debates caught the eye of the European correspondent of the *New York Daily Tribune*, then the world's best-selling newspaper. In the autumn of 1851, the paper had chosen the émigré German communist, Karl Marx, to provide twice-weekly reports from the capital of the world's imperial superpower. Marx had fled to London in 1849 following the defeat of the 1848 revolutions across the continent, and journalism gave him a much-needed source of income. Under its founding editor, Horace Greeley, the *Tribune* took a strong reforming line, giving Marx a platform for his emerging critique of capitalism. Over the summer of 1853, Marx produced a string of articles that dissected the Company's affairs for his American readers. In his eyes, the Company's charter could be boiled down to five simple points: 'a permanent financial deficit, a regular over-supply of wars, and no supply at all of public works, an abominable system of taxation, and a no less abominable system of justice and law'.[51] Digging beneath the façade of Company rule, Marx argued that it 'no longer existed but in name and on sufferance'. He mocked the Court of Directors, only one of whom had been to India, and this was by accident. He lampooned the Company's famed administrative system, arguing that 'there exists no government by which so much is written and so little done'. For Marx, 'we have thus a Corporation ruling over an immense Empire, not formed, as in Venice, by eminent patricians, but by old obstinate clerks and the like odd fellows'.[52]

Marx's interest in the Company went deeper than biting commentary. Drawing on his analysis of class society, Marx positioned the Company as a tool of Britain's elite interests in India: 'the aristocracy wanted to conquer it, the moneyocracy to plunder it and the millocracy to undersell it'.[53] Like Burke before him, Marx argued that the Company had brought about a revolution in India. But where Burke protested against the disruption of Indian culture, Marx's almost mystical view of the logic of history led him to believe that this destruction would ultimately yield positive results. Sharing many of the same beliefs in the march of progress as James Mill before him, Marx saw Asia as burdened by an unchanging reign

of oriental despotism. India was thus sunk in a state of stagnant, vegetative barbarism characterised by caste and superstition. Marx was certainly sickened by the way in which the Company had first plundered India, and then dismantled its economy, destroying the textile industry in the process. There was no doubt in his mind that 'the misery inflicted by the British on Hindostan is of an essentially different and infinitely more intensive kind than all of Hindostan had to suffer before'.[54] Yet Marx believed that Western intervention was essential if India was to achieve any form of regeneration. Motivated by the 'vilest interests' it may have been, but Marx saw British domination producing all the conditions for modernisation: political unification, a well-equipped army, a free press and rapid communications, along with the creation of a new class 'imbued with European science'.[55]

Two things are remarkable about Marx's analysis of the Company. The first is how little he is interested in the Company as a corporation. Unlike Smith, Marx had no time for evaluating the comparative merits of partnerships and joint stock companies. Marx's fascination was with large-scale, factory-based, industrial production. As a result, the great trading companies would later be relegated, in the first volume of *Capital*, to the zone of 'primitive accumulation'. Readers look in vain for Marx's insights into the speculative dynamics of the shareholder-owned company or how the corporation's drive for monopoly fits with the wider concentration of capital. The other notable aspect of his attitudes to India is their underlying alignment with those of his friend, John Stuart Mill.

Mill was one of Marx's few friends in London in the early 1850s, and the two shared a passion for economic theory.[56] Mill had published his own *Principles of Political Economy* in 1848, the same year as the *Communist Manifesto* and a decade before Marx's first volume of *Capital* appeared. It is an extraordinary pairing. On one side, we have John Stuart Mill, the intellectual insider, earning his living as a corporate executive managing an overseas empire, while retaining an eye to a utopian future beyond the office. On the other, there is Karl Marx, the outsider in exile, divining the seeds of revolution in the ruins of imperial rule, and paradoxically admiring the capacity of capitalism to overthrow the old order. Mill's great failure was to accept the deceptive rationalisation of the Company's role in India as an educative force. As Edward Said remarked in *Culture and Imperialism*, 'it is genuinely troubling to see how little Britain's great humanistic ideas, institutions and monuments, which we still celebrate as having the power ahistorically to command

our approval, how little they stand in the way of the accelerating imperial process'.[57] It is no surprise that James and John Stuart Mill's works have been approvingly referenced as the model for 'democratic imperialism' in the aftermath of the twenty-first century invasion of Iraq.[58]

In August 1853, Parliament passed an extension to the Company's charter after some perfunctory debates. One of the last areas of corporate privilege – the right of patronage over appointments in India – was replaced by selection by competitive exams; the proposed increase in director salaries was clawed back. But this historical anachronism was given another 20 years to rule India in return for a guaranteed dividend.

A REBELLION FORETOLD

The Great Rebellion of 1857 is often seen as a one-off event, a revolt that came out of the blue against the backdrop of an otherwise peaceful acceptance of Company rule. But powerful warning signs had been ignored. Many explanations have been given for this uprising against the Company, but its increasing racial and administrative arrogance lay at the root. The seeds of racism had always been there. As long before as the Company's botched evacuation of Calcutta in 1756, Maria Carey, the Anglo-Indian wife of an English soldier, had been refused entry on one of the departing ships because of her mixed race. But it was from the beginning of the nineteenth century that the slide into separatism became unstoppable. One by one the traditional ties between the army and local communities were cut. Hindu and Muslim holy men were barred from blessing sepoy regimental colours, and troops were stopped from participating in festival parades. As missionary presence grew, fears mounted that the Company was planning a wholesale forcible conversion to Christianity.

The first sign of what was to follow came as early as July 1806, when sepoys belonging to the army of the Madras Presidency mutinied against new rules that introduced a uniform dress code. The rules removed many of the distinguishing marks of caste and religion that defined the sepoys' identity. Egged on by the exiled family of the Tipu Sultan, the sepoys in Vellore rose up and killed or wounded over 200 of the 370-strong British garrison. Although the mutiny was quickly suppressed, an investigation into the affair pointed to the increasing distance between the Company's officials and the people. A commission of Indians was proposed as a way

of channelling popular complaints, along with a recommendation to send additional British troops as a precautionary measure. Neither step was taken, however. The warnings were intensified in the debates over missionary activity in 1813. In his last public engagement, Warren Hastings came out of retirement to testify for three hours before a parliamentary committee examining the Company's charter. His advice was clear: 'a Surmise had gone abroad that there was an intention of forcing our Religion on the Natives. Such an Opinion, propagated among the Native Infantry might be attended by dangerous consequences', indeed it 'might create a religious war'.[59]

All these sleights and apprehensions came to a head in 1857 when sepoys in the Company's Bengal Army rejected a new type of rifle cartridge said to be greased with cow and/or pig fat. Yet as the conservative politician, Benjamin Disraeli, observed at the time 'the rise and fall of empires are not affairs of greased cartridges', adding that 'such results are occasioned by adequate causes, and by the accumulation of adequate causes'. For Disraeli, the Company's administration had 'alienated or alarmed almost every influential class in the country'.[60] One group that had been profoundly 'alienated' were the local rulers in Awadh, Kanpur and Jhansi, who had been seen their lands annexed under the Company's policy of lapse. All turned against the Company when the soldiers mutinied, giving much-needed status to a military uprising to oust the British, regarded by many as 'trespassers'. Symbolically, the first act of the mutineers at Meerut was to march the 36 miles to Delhi to claim the puppet Mughal Emperor Bahadur Shah Zafar as their leader. Zafar celebrated by slaughtering sheep on the festival of Eid, and composed some lines of poetry, hoping that 'all the enemies of the faith [may] be killed today, the *Feringhis* (foreigners) be destroyed root and branch![61]

The uprising was never a unified movement, and it was only in 1909 that the Hindu propagandist Veer Savarkar adopted it into the nationalist canon as the 'First War of Indian Independence'. It was certainly a war of independence in Awadh, which had just been occupied by the Company's troops in 1856, and whose capital, Lucknow, would be one of the centres of conflict. The violence was largely geographically limited to the Hindustan of north India, and within this area 'no community, caste or class was entirely for or against the rebellion', writes Biswamoy Pati.[62] Clearly something far greater than a mutiny, it was simultaneously a restorative revolt of feudal rulers ousted by the British as well as a popular uprising of

peasants and tribals against Company rule. The patriotic glue which brought coherence was the protection of the religions of Hindustan – Hindu and Muslim – against the oppressive innovations of the foreigners. For Rajat Kanta Roy, the best term for it is the one used by the mutineers themselves: the 'war' of 'the Hindoostanis' to protect their *dharma* and *deen* and to 'save the country'.[63]

The war lasted for almost two years, and was characterised by extreme savagery on both sides. When the Company retook Kanpur (Cawnpore), where rebel troops had slaughtered European women and children, captured sepoys were made to lick the blood from the floors before being hanged. Summary executions became the norm. According to one officer, 'we hold court-martials on horseback, and every nigger we meet with we either string up or shoot'.[64] The Company's recapture of Delhi was followed by systematic sacking, and the surviving inhabitants were turned out of its gates to starve. At the end of this third and final Company–Mughal war, Bahadur Shah Zafar's two sons and grandson were killed in cold blood, and the old emperor sent into exile in Rangoon.

The Company that had flourished in a symbiotic relationship with the Mughal Empire for 250 years could not long survive its passing. The rebellion had generated a ferocious bloodlust in British society, and the anomalous Company was an easy scapegoat for the nation's fury. *Punch* magazine summed up the feelings of many when it published its cartoon of the 'Execution of the East India Company' on 15 August 1857 (see Illustration 9.2, p. 197). Mimicking the Company's practice of blasting captured rebels from the mouths of its cannon, the cartoon shows the 'blowing up (there ought to be) in Leadenhall Street', with the classical grandeur of East India House flying through the air with all charges of 'avarice', 'blundering', 'nepotism', 'misgovernment' and 'supineness'. Even the mild-mannered Charles Dickens wished that he was the commander-in-chief in India so that he would able to 'do my utmost to exterminate the Race upon whom the stain of the late cruelties rested' – a chilling foretaste of Kurtz's crazed call to 'exterminate the brutes' in Joseph Conrad's novella *Heart of Darkness*.[65]

Like failed corporations before and since, the only solution was nationalisation. But the Company put up a last-ditch fight to forestall the inevitable. Promoted to chief examiner in March 1858, John Stuart Mill presented a lengthy petition to Parliament. In perhaps the longest corporate whinge in history, Mill first of all argued that the Company had at its 'own expense, and by the agency of their own civil and military servants, originally acquired for this

country its magnificent empire in the East' – as if it was doing the nation a favour. The language became richer still, with Mill claiming that it was 'the most beneficent [government] ever known among mankind'. In the debates that followed, George Cornewall Lewis MP exposed the vacuity of Mill's claims, asserting that 'no civilised government ever existed on the face of this earth which was more corrupt, more perfidious, and more rapacious' than the East India Company between 1757 and 1784. For Lewis, the Company had become an 'accidental body' of shareholders with no relation to the affairs of India. The rest of Parliament agreed, and legislation was passed stripping the Company of all its administrative powers in India, and transferring these to the Crown. On 1 November 1858, a proclamation was read from every military cantonment in India: the East India Company was abolished and direct rule by Queen and Parliament was introduced. Firework displays followed the proclamation.

The Company is often regarded as an inevitable stepping-stone to the British Raj. Instead, the British Empire in India is better thought of as the product of the Company's failure. Observing the Company's fall with some glee, Marx told his American readers that the directors 'do not die like heroes, it must be confessed': 'they have bartered away their power, as they came into it, bit by bit, in a business like way'. For Marx, 'they commenced by buying sovereignty and they have ended by selling it'.[66]

THE LAST LAUGH

Yet the Company was not quite dead. Many histories of the Company stop either with the removal of commercial privileges in 1833 or in 1858 with its expulsion from Indian affairs. But the Company continued on for another 16 years, a corporate zombie, reduced to the most basic corporate task of all: the distribution of the annual dividend. With all its administrative functions transferred across town to the India Office in Whitehall, the Company sold its impressive headquarters on Leadenhall Street, and pensioned off most of its employees: John Stuart Mill received an annual £1,500, along with a gold-inlaid inkstand. The Company kept a clerk and its directors continued to meet, first in the boardroom of the Red Sea Telegraph Company at 62 Moorgate, and then at 11 Pancras Lane, north of the City.

The Company's archives stretch for miles at the British Library. But the account of its activities after 1858 is contained in a single

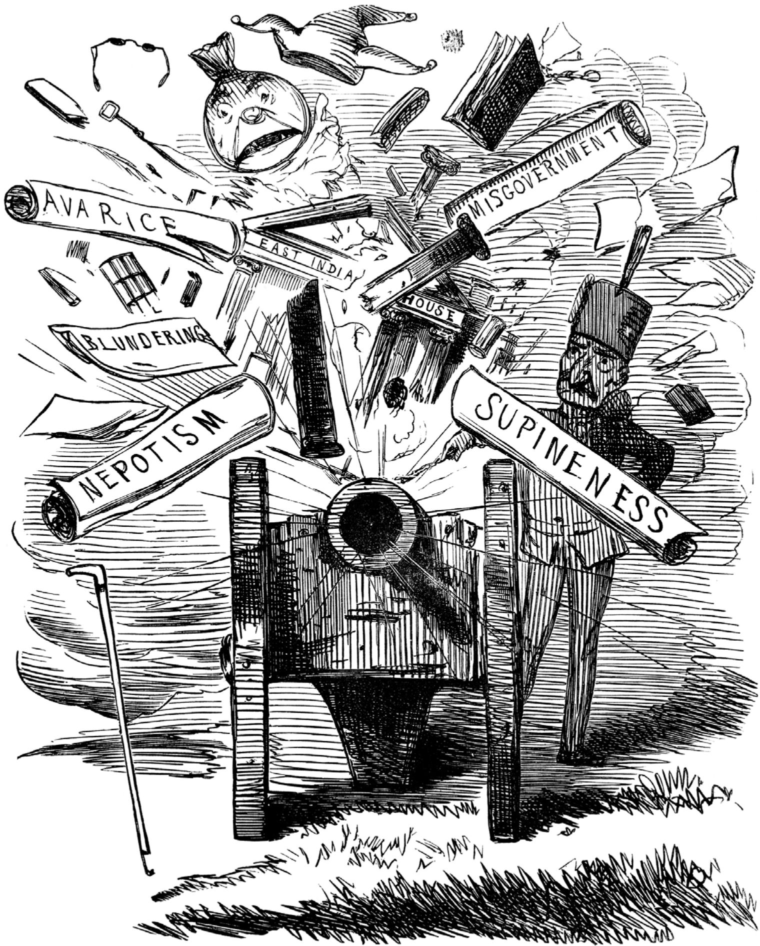


Illustration 9.2 Punch, Execution of 'John Company', 1857

volume, the Treasury Court Minutes. With the Company's crest stamped on the back, this leather-bound book is only half-full. It describes a desultory existence of empty meetings and routine payments. The cycle started to come to a close in the summer of 1873. In May, Parliament rubber-stamped the government's proposals for redeeming the remaining £6 million of Company stock. The Act of 1833 had not only guaranteed investors a 10.5 per cent dividend until 1874, but it had also laid down generous terms for any eventual buy-out. In the East India Stock Redemption

Act, the government offered shareholders either £200 of 3 per cent government annuities, £200 of 4 per cent India debt or £200 in cash for every £100 of Company stock. In effect, another £12 million of debt was added to the India account, its interest to be covered by the Indian taxpayer, some £869 million in today's money.[67] After the transfer of the stock, shareholders met for the last time in December, and the final dividend was paid on 30 April 1874. Among their number were Corpus Christi College, Oxford, holding £145, Richard Benyon de Beauvoir with some £4,000, Deeble Boger at £10,000 and Joseph Dobree with £11,700 in shares.

A final clear-out of the Company's affairs was now required, and on 13 May 1874, the clerk sent a rather pathetic letter to the Secretary of State for India asking whether he would 'take charge of the Charters, Seals, Documents etc'. On Wednesday 20 May at 1.30 p.m., the Company's Court of Directors gathered for the last time. There was some £32,000 in the accounts, matching almost exactly the £30,000 raised by investors back in 1599, a nice piece of historical symmetry. After paying the directors' fees, the housekeeper, clerk and accountant, the chairman 'ordered the Court adjourn'. It never met again, and the Company was officially dissolved on 1 June 1874.

The Company's financial footprint extended deep into the twentieth century. Writing in 1908, Romesh Chander Dutt was outraged at the way in which the people of India had not only supplied the troops for their own conquest, financed the Company's acquisition of the subcontinent through heavy taxation, but had also paid for the Company's nationalisation. 'And the Indian people are virtually paying dividends to this day', he wrote, 'on the stock on an extinct Company in the shape of interest on Debt!'[68] This ghostly drain eventually ended in the depths of the Second World War when Britain's massive expenditure in India finally extinguished the historic debts of both Company and Raj. Long after its demise, the Company continued to shape the economies and societies it had left behind.

10
Unfinished Business

AT THE HEART OF ALL THINGS

The crossroads at Bank marks the centre-point of London's financial world. To the north lies the Bank of England, the 'Old Lady of Threadneedle Street', who once vied with the East India Company for the position as the most influential corporation of the eighteenth century, and was only nationalised by the Labour government of 1945. On the eastern edge stands the Royal Exchange in whose cellars the Company often stored pepper. Outside stands a rather forlorn sky-blue water pump erected in 1799 by the Bank, the Company and the local insurance companies, decorated with images of Britannia, the Exchange, the Sun and a Phoenix. Just across the road to the south is Change Alley where the Bank's and the Company's shares were traded in the coffee shops with such exquisite zeal. In neighboring Birchin Lane stood the Jerusalem Coffee House 'the general resort of those who had anything to do with India' and a favourite of the commanders of the Company's ships.[1] Further east along Cornhill lies Leadenhall Street, the site of East India House. And under a modest archway to the south is 3 Lombard Street, the offices of Matheson & Co., the London outpost of the Firm that finally defeated the Company.

The East India Company is forever entangled in London's emergence as an imperial metropolis and Britain's rise to global supremacy. Its business not only physically shaped the docks in the East through which the riches of Asia passed, but its stocks and bonds were central to the City's rapidly evolving financial markets. The Company's wealth and tendency to crisis determined the fate of governments and the outcome of elections, with the caucus of East Indian MPs fighting vigorously for their own and the Company's interests. Like General Motors in twentieth-century America, the Company stood at the heart of Georgian Britain, prompting Edmund Burke to comment, 'that to say the Company was in a state of distress was neither more nor less than saying the Country was in a state of distress'.[2] As a business, its immense import–

export network created not one but two lifestyle revolutions in Britain – first in textiles and then in tea. This was no ordinary civil corporation, but a hybrid institution that used the projection of military might on sea and on land to advance the interests of its executives, shareholders and the empire as a whole. Taken together, the sheer size and scale of the Company's operations mean that its fingerprints can be found in some of the pivotal turning points of the modern age: the independence of the United States, the fall of Mughal India and the implosion of Qing China. The eternal quest for dominance produced catastrophic negligence, revealed in both the Bengal famine and the growth of its opium business to become the largest trade of its age.

The Company's demise in 1858 ended the era of the chartered corporation. These leviathans of mercantilism were no longer suited to the new empire of free trade that Britain was establishing across the globe. Where the Company and other chartered companies had once married the functions of overseas sovereign and trader, these were now prised apart, with the Royal Navy taking up the role of commercial enforcer, as it had done in the opium wars. The decline of the slave trade had brought the end of the Royal Africa Company in 1821 and, two years later, the ancient Levant Company was wound up. Strangely enough, the South Sea Company that had caused such panic in 1721 had lingered on for another century, and was only closed in 1853. The Hudson Bay Company continues to this day, but surrendered its territorial rights in 1869 for a future in retail. In parallel, the long-standing restrictions on corporate expansion were progressively removed, with the repeal of the 1721 Bubble Act in 1825, and the passing of the Joint Stock Act in 1844 allowing companies to be set up through simple registration. Finally, in 1862, a year after the demolition of East India House, the comprehensive Company Act was placed on the statute book, swiftly followed by a stock market bubble and the collapse of Overend & Gurney, a major bank in 1866.[3]

Much has changed in the one and a half centuries since the Company's fall from grace. Looking back at its extraordinary career, it's clear that there was not one Company, but many. In institutional terms, the original corporation with its joint stock limited to a single voyage was an entirely different beast from the global 'blue chip' multinational of the 1750s, let alone the administrative agent of empire in the 1850s. Its progress was also anything but smooth. It was almost wound up in 1657, and 30 years later, its arrogance and

adventurism cost the company its trading privileges, which it only won back by exploiting legal loopholes and forging a merger with its enemies to form the United Company in 1709. And then when the Bengal Revolution turned the world upside down, the Company's status as an autonomous business enterprise was progressively stripped away – first, the independence of its governance systems, then its trading privileges and finally all of its remaining functions, until all that was left was a financial shell, paying out dividends.

Indeed a certain duality courses throughout its corporate career. This was clearest in Clive's nawabocracy where the Company acted through a series of puppet rulers to drain Bengal's wealth. In turn, this was replaced by Pitt's own 'dual system' where the British state progressively directed operations behind a façade of Company control. Beyond this, the Company emerges not so much as a corporation with hard and fast boundaries but a commercial network often prey to competing interests, not least its own executives, its shareholders, the powerful shipping interest as well as politicians in Westminster. This blurring of the divisions that are supposed to separate the public and private sectors often resulted in a form of collusion that enabled the Company's executives to escape accountability for their actions.

If there is one clear lesson that the Company's history can bring to the twenty-first century, it is that the corporate form is not fixed, but eternally mutable. From this continual metamorphosis, four facets emerge most clearly for our times: the Company as entrepreneur, its role as a revolutionary force in world affairs, its tendency to imperial dominion and the struggle to make it accountable for its actions. And across 400 years of modern corporate history, a trinity of design flaws unite the Company with contemporary global corporations: the speculative temptations of executives and investors, the drive for monopoly control, and the absence of automatic remedy for corporate abuse.

AN AGENT OF ENTERPRISE

The precise legal form embodied by the East India Company may well have died, but its systems of administration and governance live on in the modern multinational. Indeed, the Company's management of information – through its countless writers and clerks – makes it one of the pioneers of the knowledge-based corporation.[4] Its success at matching supply and demand along lengthy supply

chains whether for textiles or tea proved to be one of the secrets of its enduring commercial success. In its twin 'golden ages', first in the 1670s and early 1680s, and then in the 1720s and 1730s, the Company demonstrated a sophisticated and focused approach to sourcing, marketing and finance that brought the consumer quality goods, earned the investor regular dividends and yielded healthy tax revenues. Yet, in each case, boom was not just followed by bust, but by a deliberate attempt to achieve unwarranted wealth and power. For Philip Francis, newly arrived as the public's champion in Bengal in the 1770s, instead of securing a 'moderate but permanent profit', the Company seemed hell-bent on producing 'immediate and excessive returns'.[5]

Part of the problem lay in the way monopoly formed an essential part of the Company's commercial identity, driving it to achieve dominion at both ends of the chain. More fundamental, according to Adam Smith, was the way in which the design of the joint-stock company created a predisposition to 'negligence and profusion' on behalf of both executives and investors. For Smith, this separation of ownership and management brought a dual danger, of executives turning the corporation to their own ends, and of shareholders investing with an absence of responsibility that direct involvement brings. Perhaps not as spectacular as the South Sea Bubble of 1720, the Company's own Bengal Bubble still bears witness to the inherent propensity of the joint stock corporation to managerial capture, insider trading, over-optimistic projections of future earnings and the irrational exuberance of financial markets. The crash and share price implosion that followed revealed to a stunned English establishment both the financial and human consequences of allowing corporations free rein.

John Company's example shows us that open markets and corporations do not necessarily mix – that economic diversity and enterprise often flourish best where corporations are kept in check. From Smith's contemporary analysis of the rising commercial economy of eighteenth-century Britain, it emerges that the truly entrepreneurial company is likely to be locally rooted, limited in size and liable for the costs it imposes on others. Although he is frequently cited as the theoretical inspiration for globalisation, Smith would be horrified at the way that the unlimited corporation now dominates economic and political life, seeing dangers not just for the achievement of world prosperity, but also for ethical practice in society at large.

THE CORPORATE REVOLUTIONARY

The acquisition of trading preferences and commercial property was second nature to the Company. What set it apart is the way that it acquired whole regions, and then managed them as profit-making estates. The British Company was not alone in this. Much earlier, the Dutch VOC had showed how to establish corporate rule in its conquest of Indonesia. And it was in southern India that the French had pioneered the practice of 'nabob-making', which Clive would transfer so successfully to Bengal. Where John Company's revolution differed was in the way it overturned the world's existing commercial order.

Bengal was the richest province of one of the two great Asian economies – India and China – and had become central to the Company's trading strategy from the late seventeenth century. But the Company's quest for personal and corporate profit was not satisfied by the confirmation of its duty-free status in the famous *firman* of 1717. Almost immediately, its officers in Bengal began to use it as a cover for their own private trade. Not only did this break the letter of a legally binding agreement, but it represented tax evasion on a huge scale, depriving the Bengal treasury of revenues. The road to Plassey would be marked by repeated efforts by the local nawab to make the Company obey the terms of its trade agreement. For years, the Company's executives on the spot as well as its directors in London recognised that this constituted a 'gross abuse', yet did nothing to root out the problem.[6] The contempt of local law was just too profitable and too deeply embedded.

Clive's triumphant takeover effectively enabled the Company to divert Bengal's surplus from the courts of the Mughal emperor and the provincial nawab to the mansions and country estates of Britain. In addition, the acquisition provided the Company with the platform for its next round of adventurism in China. Hesitantly at first, and then increasingly insistent, the Company brought Bihar's opium production under its monopoly control and actively encouraged its smuggling into China as a way of funding the burgeoning trade in tea. Once again, the Company at home and abroad were fully conscious of the illegality of its actions. But the prize was simply too great. When the Chinese authorities eventually intervened to suppress the trade, gunboat diplomacy was the joint response of Company and Crown.

It was the Company's persistence in the use of both political and economic means to achieve its financial ends that lay behind the

breaking of these world empires. The Mughal Empire was already in decline by the 1750s. The European companies still played a marginal role, their territories confined to the coastal edges, and their trade accounted for only a fraction of the empire's external commerce. Following Plassey and thereafter the transfer of the *diwani* in 1765, a profit-making institution was established at the heart of the tottering Mughal regime, progressively draining its resources and influence. The bid to control China's markets took much longer to achieve, and the Company's role is certainly secondary to the wider imperial impetus of the British state. But its remorseless promotion of opium provided the lever with which to prise open the self-sustaining Qing economy. It was the British East India Company that broke the regulatory authority of first the Mughals and then the Qing; the industrial production of Manchester merely delivered the economic *coup de grâce*.

There was no doubt in the minds of Robert Clive, Edmund Burke or much later Karl Marx that what the Company had achieved was revolutionary. Clive's reaction was one of sheer delight, seeing an endless flow of treasure from East to West. Initially, Burke also revelled in Clive's early successes. But as he learned more, and delved deeper into the Company's practices, he became increasingly horrified at the way this commercial body had illegitimately overturned the established order in India. And for Marx, ever the dialectician, the revolution engineered by the Company was both a human disaster and the spur to modernisation. Even Burke's great empathy with the people of India, however, would not allow him to touch the reality of imperial rule.

THE IMPERIAL CORPORATION

For the last 20 years of its operational life, the Company ruled purely as an agent of the British Empire. Going further back, it is possible to see in the momentous India Act of 1784 its steady transformation from a purely commercial body into an imperial administrator. The business of empire – to use Huw Bowen's phrase – was therefore central to the Company's identity for at least the final third of its existence. Yet, it is possible to identify this 'imperial gene' influencing the Company's actions far earlier, most notably in the disastrous bid for power under Josiah Child in the 1680s. The constant jostling with the state over who should benefit from regulatory and fiscal regimes was inherent in the corporate form. What made this tension imperial was the peculiar nature

of the Company's chartered existence whereby it took on certain attributes of a sovereign state in its dealing with foreign powers. More fundamental than this, however, was the perpetual corporate drive for maximising returns for its executives and its investors. This could be achieved most effectively by placing both state and society in a subordinate role, extracting wealth without accountability – the operating style of empires through the ages.

The result was, of course, the great drain of India, a subject of heated controversy ever since Burke first coined the phrase back in the 1780s. Two problems have bedevilled analysis of the Company's economic impacts on India: statistics and implications. The fragmentary nature of corporate and national accounting in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries makes any estimate of the Company's financial impact open to critique. Considerable judgement is also required in defining what should be incorporated in the drain, which at its broadest would encompass the value of the Company's unrequited trade with India and the value of its executives' private trade. Despite their incessant squabbling over the issue, the estimates of modern academics do not differ greatly from the annual £1.2 million that Burke calculated in 1783. In the 1960s, Professor N.K. Sinha derived a somewhat higher figure of £1.6 million averaged between 1757 and 1780, while Rajat Datta more recently cut the amount drained to £1 million in the years between Plassey and 1794.[7] These are likely to be significant underestimates as they fail to account for the significant value the Company's monopoly position gave it in extracting below-market rates for commodities such as textiles and opium, and the resulting subsidy this provided to the China trade. The drain, of course, changed its character radically in the nineteenth century, when the Company ceased trading. For Montgomery Martin, writing in 1838, the average transfer of the previous 30 years had amounted to some £3 million, which he calculated as equivalent to £723,997,917 at a 12 per cent compound rate of interest.[8] In terms of twenty-first-century purchasing power, this represents a tribute of well over £50 billion.[9]

The more substantive issue is what difference these flows made to the rise of Britain and the decline of India and, subsequently, China. Contemporaries were clear. 'We may date the commencement of the decline', wrote Alexander Dow in 1772, 'from the day on which Bengal fell under the domination of the foreigners.'[10] Turning to Britain, controversy rages over the links between the Company's conquest of India in the financing of the Industrial Revolution. For

Brooks Adams, writing at the end of the nineteenth century, the coincidence of the influx of Bengal plunder with the deployment of new industrial technologies was compelling. Without the resources provided by the Indian drain, Adams argued that the spinning jenny, Crompton's mule and Watts's steam engine would have lain dormant. 'Possibly since the world began,' Adams concluded, 'no investment has ever yielded the profit reaped from the Indian plunder.'[11] Adams's conclusions were deployed extensively by Indian nationalists in the struggle for independence. But modern Indian historians have been more cautious, arguing, for example, that 'it is highly unlikely that these private fortunes constituted an element of any importance in the financing of the Industrial Revolution'.[12]

To get to the heart of the matter, a more granular analysis is required. Markets move at the margin, and the key to the drain lies in its impact on relative patterns of consumption and capital formation. In India, the drain depressed consumption and diverted its already small savings rate, while enabling Britain to live beyond its means, to consume, trade and invest at a greater rate than its own internal economy would allow. The great secret of the drain lay in its capacity not to support the extravagant lifestyles of a few hundred nabobs, but to furnish the commodities for an extensive re-export trade of Asian goods to Europe, the Americas and beyond. The Company's unrequited import surplus with Asia was already £1.4 million by 1770 and surged to £4.8 million in 1800. This raw statistic hides the true significance of the shift, however. Drawing on recent analysis carried out by Utsa Patnaik, the Asian drain grew as a proportion of Britain's gross domestic product from 1.7 per cent in 1770 to 3.5 per cent in 1800.[13] Crucially, from 1800 onwards the Asian drain began to match the enormous extraction of wealth that Britain had historically achieved from the slave-based sugar plantations of the West Indies. Together, the combined surplus in 1801 was equivalent to over 86 per cent of Britain's entire capital formation from domestic savings.[14]

For Jawarhalal Nehru, the most powerful indicator of the harm done by the combined impact of the Company and British Raj was that 'those parts of India which have been longest under British rule are the poorest today', picking out Bengal, Bihar and Orissa for particular mention.[15] More fundamentally, expert estimates suggest that India's already waning per capita income levels fell from $540 in the year of Plassey to $520 on the outbreak of the Great Rebellion in 1857; over the same period, Britain's per capita income leapt from $1,424 to $2,717.[16]

MAKING THE COMPANY ACCOUNTABLE

As Edmund Burke observed at first hand, corporations are not self-correcting. There is nothing in their design to call a halt to further market expansion, or desist from political interventions that rig the market in their favour. In Burke's age and ours, the need for external mechanisms to bring corporate malpractice to account is therefore essential. But when the Company's extensive network of bribes came to light in the 1690s, and Parliament tried to impeach the President of the Privy Council, the King simply dismissed Parliament. When Clive's crimes of the 'blackest dye' were presented to the Commons 70 years later, his misdeeds were offset against his contribution to imperial expansion, and he escaped without censure. And when Burke used the impeachment process once more to make Hastings accountable for his actions in Bengal, the House of Lords found him not guilty. In the face of Hastings's evident malpractice, Burke's mismanagement of the case makes the outcome even more frustrating.

The Company did have in place a series of rules and covenants to direct the behaviour of its employees. After the corruption of the 1690s, the Company managed to operate a reasonably ethical standard of conduct. But when presented with the windfall profits generated by its acquisitions in India, these controls simply crumbled in a frenzy of greed. The introduction of a ban on the receipt of bribes in 1764 was simply too little, too late. Lawrence Sulivan did try to rein in the more extreme aspects of Clive's adventurism. But when he was in dire need of cash in the 1770s, Sulivan was only too happy to send his son, Stephen, to Bengal to regain the family fortune in opium and contracting. Monopoly power, Adam Smith warned, does not just damage the market, but it also gives licence to managerial negligence. The Company's practices did not just result in economic losses for English consumers and Indian producers, but in social dislocation and the corrosion of the public realm. The Bengal Famine of 1770 continues to stare down the centuries as a shocking reminder of where corporate negligence can lead. Writing over a hundred years after the event, George Chesney, a civil servant at the India Office in London, was forced to admit in 1877 that the Bengal Famine had caused a 'desolation … the marks of which have not wholly ceased'.[17]

For Burke, the only way to confront this impunity was to recast the Company's charter so that it became accountable once more. Speaking to Parliament in defence of his India Bill in December

1783, Burke made a clear distinction between political and commercial rights. The 'Magna Charta is a charter to restrain power and to destroy monopoly'; but 'the East India charter is a charter to establish monopoly and to create power'. Burke believed that he had a strong case for making the Company and its executives accountable for their actions: 'they themselves are responsible – their body as a corporate body, themselves as individuals – and the whole body and train of their servants are responsible to the high justice of this kingdom'. The grant of a corporate charter carried with it intrinsic duties, according to Burke, since 'this nation never did give a power without imposing a proportionable degree of responsibility'.[18] Yet Burke's passionate rhetoric was insufficient to make these principles of natural law overturn the vested interests and imperial pride that dominated eighteenth-century Britain.

For centuries, states pursued the imperial interests of monarchs against their own and other peoples. Reform and revolution have ensured that most states are bounded by constitutions at home and international law abroad, and charged with promoting the wider public interest within the community of nations. When states still act in an imperial manner – pursuing their self-interest to the disregard of others – it is now transparent that this breaks established norms of behaviour. The international opposition to the US and British invasion of Iraq in 2003 drew much of its passion from this powerful sense that well-established standards of law and ethics were being flagrantly violated.

This process of democratisation has, however, largely passed by the gates of the corporation. Just as the state was tamed through democracy and law, so corporations need to be retuned so that they work in harmony with the rest of society. 'It wasn't necessary to throw out government to do away with monarchy,' argues business ethics writer Marjorie Kelly, 'instead we changed the basis of sovereignty on which government rested'.[19] For this exercise, the Company's history offers fragments of hope, principles that can be used in our own times – most notably Smith's analysis of the corporation's agency problem and its monopolising tendencies, as well as Burke's dual recognition that all people, whatever their culture, have equal rights to justice, and that corporations are public institutions accountable to Parliament.

This means that the four forces that drive corporate behaviour – finance, technology, scale and regulation – need to be recast to ensure protection of the public interest. First of all, stringent rules are needed to ensure that management and investors do not use the

corporation as a tool for their short-term interests at the expense of others. Next, its market power and political influence must be limited. If its sway in the marketplace grows too great, it will deny choice and invariably use its position to narrow the opportunities for others, squeezing suppliers and gouging consumers. And if the corporation becomes a powerful political force then it can rig the rules of regulation so that it enjoys unjustified public subsidy or protection. Clear and enforceable systems of justice have to be in place to hold the corporation to account for damage to society and the environment. The road to legal remedy must be accessible and with effective measures to level the playing field between the individual and the institution. And, finally, economic diversity needs to be realised, putting the joint stock corporation in its rightful place.

INSERTING THE ETHICS GENE

The corporation's financial design provides the basic genetic code for a historically novel and fundamentally strange form of person. With a discreet legal identify, the corporation is theoretically immortal – a distinct advantage in the turbulent times of the eighteenth century in that 'it was not liable to be killed in battle or die of a fever'.[20] Of course this advantage of eternal life was constrained by the fact that the Company had to renew its charter, making it face the prospect of corporate death every 20 years. The Company's contemporaries struggled to understand just what type of person the corporation would be. At a time when belief in religion was near universal, Justice Pollexfen's argued in the 1690s that the Company was simply 'an invisible body without soul or conscience', with the implication that ethical acts would unlikely to flow from such an institution.[21] In our more secular age, it is argued that psychology provides some clues as to the nature of corporate identity, with Joel Bakan highlighting how corporations exhibit many of the characteristics of psychopaths: irresponsible, manipulative, grandiose, lacking empathy, inability to feel remorse and superficiality in relationships.[22] And, of course, the joint stock corporation has a split personality, with its component parts – the shareholders – having unlimited rights to returns, but limited liability for debts and damage.

We know that corporations can be immensely useful economic institutions and can deliver this with a positive impact on wider well-being. What makes this happen is the presence of ethical individuals, internal codes of self-regulation and external vigilence and control. Yet, as successive corporate and financial crises have

shown, these mitigating factors are not intrinsic to the corporate form. Ultimately, to prevent this potentially soul-less, psychopathic corporate personality wreaking havoc what is needed is the deliberate insertion of characteristics that force it to be human in the fullest sense. This means encoding ethical conduct into corporate design. Advocates of corporate reform have generally focused on introducing regulations to tackle specific issues, such as workplace safety, equal opportunities or environmental management. Others have seen state ownership as the solution to the corporate abuse of power, a process now being reversed worldwide through privatisation. Yet, the in-built pursuit of institutional and individual self-interest – which forms the foundation of the British and American model of the firm – has been left untouched in company law. As if blinded with awe at the imperial might of the corporation, politicians have not only extended the legal rights of the modern firm, but deliberately disarmed the state of its countervailing powers. In many ways, the global economy is currently living through the worst of both worlds: the removal of government restraints on economic activity without the introduction of compensating restraints on the power of corporations.

Historically, the sole duty of company directors has been to the company's shareholders. In spite of the best intentions of many corporate executives, this legal imperative has a deeply corrosive effect on the way in which companies approach their social responsibilities. In most cases, corporate responsibility becomes another term for enlightened self-interest – that good conduct towards customers, regulators and communities helps to generate a 'licence to operate'. The problem comes, of course, when the interests of company and society conflict. At this point, corporate responsibility slips into the shadows and the supremacy of shareholder value reasserts itself. Equally, there have been no codes or regulations to ensure that shareholders place their demands for returns within a broader framework of respect for the long-term interests of the corporation or the rights of others. In the fine words of Adam Smith, special measures are required to bring more 'dignity and steadiness' to the conduct of both executives and investors.

Central to this effort is a rebalancing of corporate rights and privileges, so that the current protection of limited liability does not screen executives and investors from the consequences of their actions. For one of the pioneers of socially responsible investment in the UK, the argument is clear: 'society gives companies the privilege

of limited liability; such a privilege should have social responsibility associated with it'.[23] For this to happen, an 'ethics gene' needs to be inserted into company law. The first rule of ethics is to 'do no harm'. To realise this in the corporate context, company directors need to be given a legal duty of care to ensure that their actions do not damage society or the environment; investors equally need to have a parallel duty to ensure that their demand for financial returns does no harm. Generate a profit by all means, but this cannot be at the expense of others.

Tentative moves in this direction have been made. In the first major reform of UK corporate law for over 150 years, the 2006 Companies Act modified the duties of directors. Directors must still pursue the success of the company for the benefit of its shareholders. But these actions must be taken with 'regard to' long-term consequences, employee interests, relationships with suppliers and customers, community and environmental impacts and reputational factors. This is a 'duty to think', but not a 'duty to act' to actually reduce and eliminate negative costs for others.[24] Establishing a legal requirement would just be the first step. Companies would need to review their operations to check for compliance. Transition periods could be considered to manage the shift from harmful industries to those that truly added value through their products and processes. And ultimately, these statutory duties would need to be matched by sanctions that were visible and dissuasive, including the removal of a company's licence for gross misconduct. As Burke declared more than two hundred years ago, 'if the abuse is proved, the contract is broken'.

Through this simple, yet profound, alteration in the corporation's genetic code, its inner dynamics would be reshaped to match its social obligations. The limited liability of shareholders also needs to be matched by an equivalent ethical obligation to 'do no harm' in the stewardship of their assets and, ideally, hand them on in a better condition. For the think-tank Tomorrow's Company, the ancient duty of stewardship should now involve 'shareholders, directors or others seeking to influence companies in the direction of long-term, sustainable performance that derives from contributing to human progress and the well-being of environment and society'.[25] These noble aspirations have yet to be embodied in investor law. But their inclusion remains a realistic prospect, and when they are, not just corporations, but capital itself would start becoming accountable.

DOWNSIZING THE CORPORATION[26]

Corporate scale serves to magnify an underlying problem of behaviour. When it was small, the damage that the Company could inflict was relatively limited. When it grew in size to dominate whole markets and territories, its potential for harm grew correspondingly large. Twenty-first-century corporations rarely enjoy the chartered monopolies that the East India Company fought so hard to sustain. But there is little doubt that the corporation's dual focus on 'widening the market and narrowing the competition' that Smith observed continues to prevail. Tragically, global deregulation has not been accompanied by assertive antitrust and competition policies, and so concentration in key markets has climbed to economically destructive and politically dangerous levels. In this drive for monopoly, the contemporary corporation is rewarded by its investors, who favour those who can demonstrate strong 'barriers to entry' and extensive 'pricing power' since these will generate excess profits for shareholders.

In sector after sector – banking, energy, food processing and retail, media and telecoms – the remorseless search for profits is leading companies to close down competition through mergers and acquisitions. The global media industry is a case in point. In the early 1980s, the US market was dominated by 50 firms; by the turn of the millennium, this had fallen to fewer than ten. Speaking on World Press Freedom Day 2002, then Czech President Vaclav Havel declared that 'fifty years from now, the globalisation process may be the biggest threat to freedom of expression'.[27] Privatisation and deregulation have, perversely, contributed to this trend. In the European power sector, a recent study concluded that 'market concentration in the field of power generation has to be seen as endangering fair, competitive and sustainable energy markets'.[28] Just as the East India Company monopolised the textile production of India to force down prices and exert greater control, so many of today's major commodity chains have become highly concentrated, generating powerful downward pressure on the prices of goods exported by developing countries. Three companies control 45 per cent of all of the world's coffee roasting, for example, while four companies account for 40 per cent of cocoa grinding.[29] Diversity in global retailing has also shrunk dramatically in recent years, with the top 30 companies accounting for around one-third of all grocery sales. This retail concentration helps to explain why successive rounds of trade liberalisation have not led to improved

prosperity for poor nations. As Jean Ziegler concluded for the UN Commission on Human Rights, 'global commodity markets are increasingly dominated by fewer global transnational corporations that have the power to demand low producer prices, while keeping consumer prices high, thus, increasing their profit margins'.[30] The great drain is being repeated once more, with supermarkets able to deploy their market power to 'drain the wealth from farming communities and marginalised small-scale producers'.[31] And, as the Company showed in its relations with European and Asian states, corporate power is as much a political as an economic problem.

Whether it is trade agreements that bias development towards business interests, or successive reductions in the share of tax levied from corporations (a proportion that has halved in the USA since the 1950s), the East India Company casts a long shadow over a process of globalisation that so many of its supporters claim is new to the world.[32]

Antitrust and competition policies are supposedly designed to deal with these threats to market diversity. But these have largely failed to 'have much bearing on the concentration of economic activity'.[33] Although market dominance by a few key firms (oligopoly) breaches the tenets of neo-classical theory, it has been increasingly accepted in practice across the world. Writing in the 1970s, John Kenneth Galbraith acknowledged somewhat despairingly that 'King Canute looks down on those who administer our antitrust laws with the utmost understanding and sympathy'.[34] Since then, 30 years of privatisation, deregulation and trade liberalisation have undone many of these modest gains, and created new global combinations to replace the national champions of an earlier age. The result is a crisis of control that demands a similarly robust approach to global antitrust as inspired reformers in the last century. Not only is such a global antitrust approach economically urgent, but it also offers the prospect of a powerful new alliance between those supporting open markets and those aiming to curb corporate power.

In Adam Smith's economic vision, monopoly corporations were simply 'nuisances in every respect'. Urgent action is needed to reverse the process of corporate concentration. Targeted global antitrust investigations are needed to redress the balance, for example, in highly concentrated commodity chains on which developing countries are dependent. These investigations could help to build the mandate for the establishment of a global competition authority that would be charged with breaking up the most damaging cartels and combinations of corporate power. Importantly, this

authority would need to be wholly independent of the World Trade Organisation. Alongside this, national action has to be intensified, first by implementing the 'standstill' principle to prevent any further corporate concentration, and then introducing the 'rollback' principle to break open markets to enable economic diversity to flourish once more. In Britain, Parliament's vote in 2010 to block Rupert Murdoch's bid for BSkyB showed that continual growth in corporate power was not an inevitability, with *The Economist* magazine commenting that 'not since the East India Company was finally brought to heel in the 19th century has political power over an influential private enterprise in Britain been so brutally enforced.'[35]

RAFAEL'S LAW

The absence of a world competition authority is certainly a major gap in the architecture of global governance. But it is not the only thing that is missing. As Burke's struggle to remove the impunity of Hastings and others demonstrated, the legal accountability of corporations and their executives is equally an essential element of an effective international order. Then, as now, human rights are universal entitlements, subject to the rule of law in spite of convenient appeals to special circumstances or 'geographical morality'. Legal victories for human rights abuse were rare in the age of Enlightenment – as they are, sadly, still today. But Gregore Cojamaul and Johannes Rafael's stunning victory in winning damages from the Company's Governor of Bengal, Harry Verelst, demonstrates that the principle of extraterritorial liability has been long established in British law at least.

By and large, the Company's abuses stemmed from its ability to deploy military technology to enforce its interests. A technology of quite a different type lies at the root of many contemporary human rights and environmental abuses: the extraction of fossil fuels, particularly in the petrochemical industry. But from the age of the East India Company, a tool has endured that is now being used to enable today's victims of corporate abuse to seek civil redress. In 1789, the new American Republic passed the Alien Tort Claims Act (ATCA) to allow foreigners to bring violations of international law to trial in US courts.[36] Originally designed to combat the scourge of piracy, in the late 1970s legal experts revived ATCA to bring those accused of international human rights abuses to justice in the USA. In 1979, Dolly Filartiga won a landmark judgment in New York against the police inspector who had supervised the

torture and killing of her brother in her native Paraguay. Summing up the sentence, Justice Irving Kaufman concluded that 'the torturer has become – like the pirate and slave trader before him – *hostis humanis generis*, 'an enemy of mankind'. Subsequently, both Ferdinand Marcos, the former dictator of the Philippines, and Radovan Karadzic of the breakaway Serb republic in Bosnia have been charged under ATCA. From the mid-1990s, the use of ATCA has been expanded to address the complicity of US and other corporations in human rights abuses across the developing world. From Chevron and Shell in Nigeria to Exxon and Freeport in Indonesia and Unocal in Burma, about two dozen cases have been filed in US courts on behalf of individuals and communities alleging killing, torture, arbitrary arrest and forced labour.

Just as Cojamaul and Rafael faced huge legal obstacles to achieving justice in the 1770s, so today's victims have faced an uphill struggle to gain recognition in the courts. About half of the ATCA cases against corporations have been dismissed. But in December 2004, a major breakthrough was achieved when Unocal reached an out-of-court settlement with 15 Burmese plaintiffs in an eight-year-long ATCA case. The lawsuit had alleged that California-based energy company Unocal was complicit in forced labour, rape and murder committed by the Burmese military during the construction of the Yadana gas pipeline from Burma to Thailand. Even though the final settlement was out of court, a number of powerful legal precedents had already been set demonstrating that corporations can be held liable for civil damages in the US for aiding and abetting human rights abuse by oppressive regimes overseas.[37] But the Unocal case also highlights the limits of existing international mechanisms for corporate accountability. Just as the Armenians in 1770s London could only win financial damages for Verelst's actions, so ACTA only involves civil law, leaving aside the frequent need to bring criminal prosecutions for corporate abuse. Even this modest relief is under threat from lobbyists seeking to free business of any form of redress for their actions overseas.

In this latest attempt to make corporations above the rule of law, inspiration can be drawn from the case of Cojamaul and Rafael. Instruments of justice need to be as international as business. The liability of corporations for harm they do needs to be clarified and access to justice facilitated. All countries, Britain and India included, need to ensure that effective legal remedies are in place to enable those affected by corporations to bring legal action in the country of operation, the company's place of registration or in an

international court. The realistic prospect of judicial intervention to penalise malpractice – wherever it may occur – would be a powerful deterrent, further encouraging business to adopt responsible practices that prevent problems in the first place.

ITS RIGHTFUL PLACE

In the pre-industrial age, the corporation was used as a tool to mobilise capital for Europe's efforts at long-distance trade and colonisation. The political and economic risks of letting corporations loose in the domestic environment were well understood, particularly in England following the South Sea Bubble. It was only when long-term capital was once again required for the railways that the corporate form was reinvented for use at home.[38] For all the differences between the Company's day and our own, the modern corporation remains primarily designed for economic conquest, deploying all the financial, human and technological tools at its disposal to achieve its ends. Regulatory reform to insert ethical duties on corporations and their shareholders, to scale back those whose size constrains economic diversity and to ensure effective remedies for abuse are all essential steps to accountability. But equally important is reminding ourselves of specific niches in which the corporation can and should flourish. For Adam Smith, the joint stock model needed to be confined to just a few sectors such as banking and utilities. For our time, it is critical that other commercial models – partnerships, mutuals, cooperatives, private, social or public enterprises – grow in importance, delivering the institutional diversity that long-term economic success requires. In the twenty-first century, 'the emerging new economy may have fewer eminent leviathans', according to David Boyle and Andrew Simms, 'but like a rugged vibrant ecosystem compared to a vast and vulnerable monoculture, it will certainly be healthier, happier, more interesting and more resilient'.[39]

Epilogue

A STATUE TO A SHEEP-STEALER

For more than a decade I have been tracking the East India Company, examining its historical record as well as its contemporary legacy. Walking through the cities it impacted in Europe and Asia helps to contextualise its impacts, placing its actions in precise locations. For me, the London leg of these journeys ends in Whitehall. If you walk to the Foreign and Commonwealth Office in London from St James's Park, you will climb up 'Clive's steps', named after the larger-than-life statue of Robert Clive that stands outside the old India Office building (see Illustration E.1). It was here that the governance of India passed after the Company's demise in 1858. But it took another 60 years for this monument to the great 'nabob-maker' to be erected. The reasons for this delay say much about his contested record. From the early 1750s, his triumph at Arcot had made Clive Britain's 'heaven-born general' in the eyes of Prime Minister William Pitt the Elder. The Plassey Revolution brought him even greater fame as a much-needed national hero during the bitter Seven Years' War. For this, Clive was made Baron of Plassey – a title that carried a sting, however, as it was only an Irish baronetcy, with a distinctly second-class status. Praise soon turned to loathing when the size of his fortune and the means by which he had acquired it became known. Even King George III protested at Clive's 'fleecing' of India. Hauled before Parliament to explain his actions, Clive declared his resentment at being treated like 'a common sheep-stealer'. Cleared he may have been in the vote that followed, but his reputation was ruined. At the time of his death, there is little doubt that he had become 'the most hated man in England', according to a recent biographer.[1]

For decades thereafter, Clive's military exploits would be praised in imperial literature, but his corruption would be equally denounced as somehow un-British, not least by Macaulay in his celebrated essay of 1840. It was only in the run-up to the 150th anniversary of Plassey in 1906–7 that a former Viceroy of India, Lord Curzon, proposed rehabilitating Clive's memory in the twin imperial cities of London and Calcutta. The reception was frosty. In India, the

Illustration E.1 Statue of Robert Clive, London

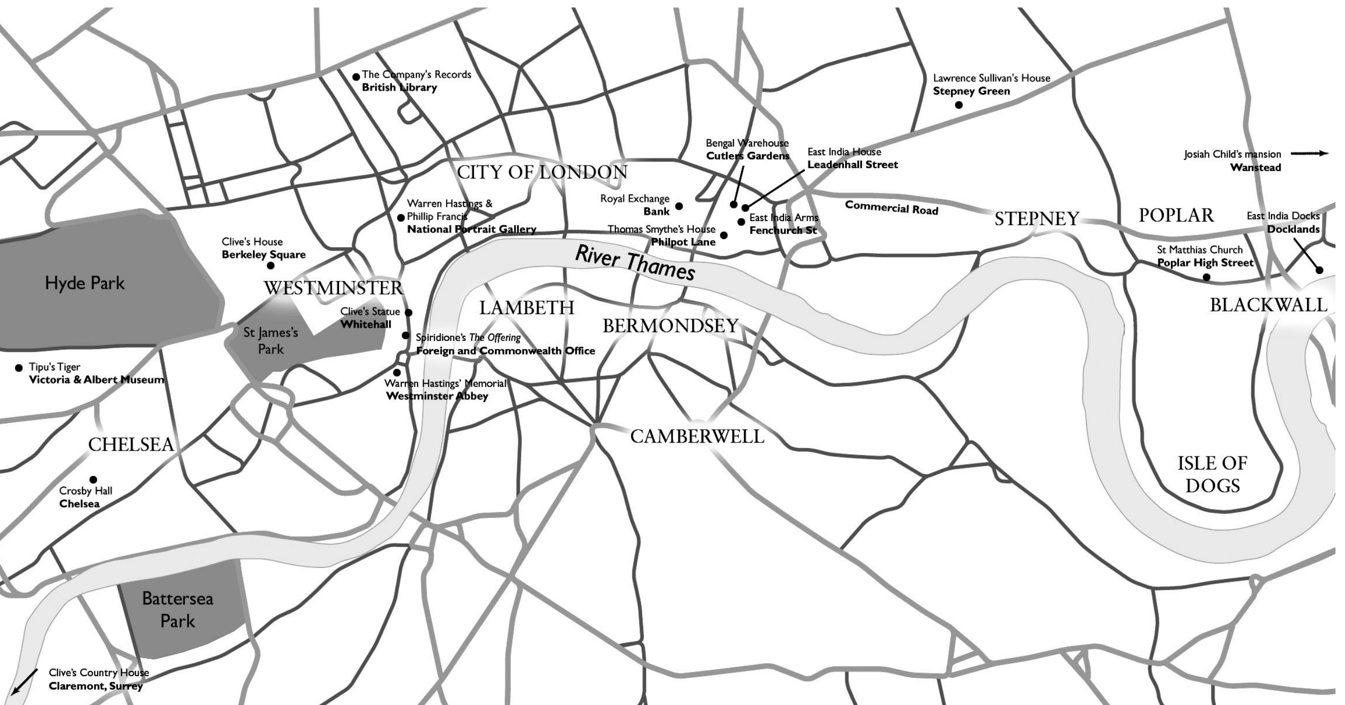
British authorities feared that such a celebration might exacerbate the rising nationalist tension in Bengal. Back in London, the Liberal Secretary of State for India, John Morley, retorted that it would have been better for Britain if Clive had lost the battle. Instead of a statue to Clive, Morley suggested erecting a monument to the

Italian nationalist, Garibaldi. But Curzon's idea tapped into the rising mood of imperial jingoism, and drawing subscriptions from the public – as well as some reluctant Indian princes – two rather bombastic statues of Clive were installed in 1911, the year of the British imperial *durbar* in Delhi.

In Kolkata, Curzon's white marble statue of Clive still stands in the lobby of the Victoria Memorial, passed by thousands of visitors who come each day to look at the historical curiosities contained within. Across the world in London, Clive's statue has a more formal and elevated place in the heart of Westminster (see Map 3). His left hand rests on the pommel of his sword, underlining the critical role of military force in the Company's rise to power. In his right hand, he clasps a bundle of documents, perhaps the forged agreement with Amir Chand that paved the way for the takeover of Bengal. Panels around the base of the statue tell how Clive made his name at the siege of Arcot, portray him poised for victory on the eve of Plassey, and show him enjoying the fruits of his acquisition of the *diwani*.

Facing west, the statue looks towards the numerous properties that Clive acquired with his Indian loot. Less than a mile away in Berkeley Square is the house where he died in November 1774, with a plaque commemorating him as 'soldier and administrator' – not businessman. Outside London in Surrey's stockbroker belt stands Claremont, which Clive had bought from the penniless Duke of Newcastle. Clive was not able to implement his grand plans he had for the place before his untimely death, but Macaulay describes how 'the peasantry of Surrey looked with mysterious horror on the stately house which was rising at Claremont, and whispered that the great wicked lord had ordered the walls to be made so thick in order to keep out the devil'. Clive's former mansion has been converted into a private boys' school, while its landscaped gardens are owned by the National Trust, where green parrots fly between the beech trees, as if they were among the *gumbads* of Delhi's Lodi Gardens. Further west still, Clive's mansion at Walcot Hall in his native Shropshire today boasts a number of holiday apartments, bearing such evocative names as 'Arcot' and 'Plassey', while his Plassey estate outside Limerick in Ireland has been recycled as the home for the town's university.

Public statues reflect the values of the ruling elite. In many countries, not least India, the heroes of previous regimes have been removed from their places of honour to mark changing perspectives on the past. The fact that one of Britain's greatest corporate rogues continues to have pride of place at the heart of government



Map 3 The Company's London

suggests that the British elite has not yet confronted its corporate and imperial past. Equally curious is the fact that the statue is in Whitehall rather than the City. Clive was a 'company man' and made his acquisitions to promote the Company's (as well as his own) interests. If a memorial is needed at all, it should be outside Leadenhall Street where East India House once stood. But, as we have seen, the City is curiously evasive about its corporate history.

Crucially, Clive's elevation is strikingly at odds with how many of the Company's contemporaries wished its leading executives to be remembered. Throughout its career, the East India Company generated a mix of emotions from admiration through fear to outright hatred. This clash of perspectives was brought out with particular clarity during the heated parliamentary debates over Robert Clive's conduct in Bengal on 10 May 1773. Opinion was divided even within the government of the day, with the Solicitor General Alexander Wedderburn coming out strongly in favour of the Company, arguing that

> the recording pen of a candid historian will relate these transactions as they were – and he will not fail to hold forth for the admiration of posterity that in a revolution which acquired to the Company a dominion larger, wealthier and more populous than ever Athens possessed or than Rome itself … so few actions are to be discovered by the most inquisitive examiner, so few that reflect dishonour on individuals, none that tarnish the British name.

Almost immediately, the Attorney General Edward Thurlow stood to contradict his learned friend, remonstrating that 'to what but the rapacity of the Company's servants is it owing that Bengal under its own government so flourishing, under ours be brought to the brink of ruin?'[2] Fifty years later, the leading utilitarian thinker, Jeremy Bentham proposed in 1822 that the Company's directors and shareholders should commission a statue to Warren Hastings with the following inscription: 'Let it but put money into our pockets, no tyranny too flagitious to be worshipped by us.' Bentham added that the statue should be twinned with 'a long-robed accomplice … lodging the bribe in the hand of the other'.[3] A memorial to Hastings was eventually erected, but with a very different inscription. Installed by his widow just inside the north transept of nearby Westminster Abbey, the sculpture is modest, stating that Hastings had been 'selected for his eminent talents and integrity'. Across

the aisle, in what could be called the Abbey's 'Company Corner' are eye-catching monuments to two of the chief protagonists at Plassey: Admiral Charles Watson and Eyre Coote, then a captain, but eventually a general. Mixing the classical with the oriental, like Spiridione's *The Offering*, the monuments speak of pure corporate supremacy. Under a palm tree, Watson's celebration has a naked Indian slumped at the bottom with his head in his hands, while Eyre Coote's tableau displays another Indian, this time with his hands tied behind his back. Similar statues litter imperial buildings from Cornwallis's monument St Paul's Cathedral to Josiah Webbe's in St Mary's church inside Fort St George, Madras.

CORPORATE *KARMA*

In the closing pages of his *The Discovery of India*, Nehru examined the consequences of 200 years of domination of India by England in terms of *karma*, the Hindu law of cause and effect. 'Entangled in its meshes', he wrote from his cell in Ahmadnagar Fort in 1944, 'we have thus struggled in vain to rid ourselves of this past inheritance and start afresh on a different basis.'[4] Independence of course was a necessary starting point for release, but one that needed to be supplemented by further action to deal with the bitter lessons of empire. For Edward Thompson, friend of Nehru and supporter of independence, England needed to make atonement (*prayaschitta*) – particularly for the barbarities that followed the rebellion of 1857–58 – if relations between the two countries were to flourish.[5] At the time, this was a step too far. But with greater distance from events, an honest cultural reckoning can enable both societies to 'start afresh'; in fact, the beginnings of this rethink is already underway.

The first step in atonement is acknowledgement. In Britain, the romantic vision of the Company still prevails, buttressed by a faith in English amateurism and imperial redemption. Famously, the nineteenth-century historian, John Seeley, concluded that 'our acquisition of India was made blindly' adding that 'nothing great that has ever been done by Englishmen was done so unintentionally, so accidentally, as the conquest of India'.[6] This wonderful myth is matched by the equally alluring fable that the evident wrongs of the Company were redeemed by the Raj, with 'the use of imputed barbarism to justify, and even ennoble, imperial ambition', perhaps what could be called the 'Paupiah Syndrome'.[7] This belief in the merits of the 'Anglobalisation' that followed in the wake of the

Company's excesses has been most assiduously promoted by Niall Ferguson.[8] By contrast, I believe that the Company's practices, its legacy and historical debt need to be brought into the open. Its physical remains can become the starting point for a vigorous programme of challenge and interpretation. More than a century has passed since Curzon decided to rehabilitate Clive's reputation with the statue outside the India Office. Since then, the world has been transformed, with the end of empire, the fall of communism and the rise of globalisation. Yet Clive's monument still stands in the same place. Some argue that the statues of the past should remain to retain a continuity of historical records, asking that if Clive was taken down, where would the process stop: would Churchill also be carted off from his plinth in Parliament Square for his involvement in the 1943 Bengal famine?[9] Others suggest that adding new statues to black and Asian historical figures would help to redress the balance. Yet some reckoning with the physical representation of the Company is certainly required – and for me, removing Clive to a museum would help to finally mark an end to one part of the culture of empire. And if it stays, perhaps placing a statue of Commissioner Lin facing Clive could communicate the long-run consequences of Clive's adventurism in Bengal far beyond Britain and India's borders.

A more important question is how the Company's remains can become living symbols of renewal. In Kolkata, the Belvedere, Hastings's mansion and scene of his duel with Francis, is now home to India's National Library, while in London, the mansion of a former Company director in Wimbledon has been transformed into a Muslim educational foundation.

Over recent years, I have been working with the London-based arts and environmental group, Platform, on a programme of activities to reveal the Company's hidden history and make the links with contemporary corporate activities. It has hosted a series of guided walks around the site of the Company's headquarters, warehouses and docks, which have stimulated broad public discussion and debate. Out of this came a project to establish the Museum of the Corporation, which would provide a focal point for public reflection on this most powerful institution of our time.[10] Aiming to inform and intrigue, the museum could combine exhibitions, education and other activities to engage the public on the role of corporations in their lives, the strengths and the weaknesses. The museum would range through the history of the corporation, showing the commonalities and discontinuities between contemporary business

and forerunners such as the East India Company. The museum would also balance physical artefacts and the best of electronic media, acting in a network with like-minded institutions across the globe. In London, the museum could be hosted in one of the East India Company's former warehouses, for example, at Cutlers Gardens, one part of which was set aside for public use as part of the redevelopment exercise in the 1970s. In Kolkata, Clive's former house at Dum-Dum would be an equally symbolic site for such a place of reflection in India. Already the Company's former chapel in Poplar has now become a centre of community efforts to reconcile the diverse communities in London's Docklands, while the Brick Lane Circle has led efforts to grapple with the Company's legacy for London's youth.[11]

The partial view of the Company in existing museums is also getting addressed. Wonderful artefacts remain, but often lie mute in their glass display cabinets. The need for new ways of revealing the Company's past was highlighted in the 'Encounters' exhibition hosted by London's Victoria and Albert Museum in 2004. Examining the economic and aesthetic exchanges between Europe and Asia in the 300 years up to 1800, the exhibition portrayed the interaction as generally one of mutual benefit and fascination. Yet there appeared to be little attempt to look at the human realities that lay behind luxury goods on display, to examine how trade was conducted, as well as what was exchanged. A simple, neo-classical gown on show in the exhibition, for example, could have told a deeper and more tragic story. Woven of Bengali muslin, most probably in Dhaka, around 1800, the gown at first glance was just a thing of beauty. No reference was made, however, to the fact that this gown was part of a dying generation, coming from an industry that was just about to be eliminated through industrial technology, tariff walls and the Company's imperial management. A mere 18 years after the gown was woven, the Company had shut its factory in Dhaka and ceased all imports of Indian muslin. Simply looking at this and other artefacts through the lens of culture fails to tell the whole story. A different approach was taken by the National Maritime Museum when it opened the first permanent gallery on the East India Company in 2011. The exhibition manages to place the extensive artefacts of maritime adventure into a refreshing display that acknowledges the human impacts of the Company's expansion into both India and China.

Yet the most profound reappraisal of the Company's place in history is underway in Asia, part of the much wider re-orientation

of the global economy. A striking example is contained in a TV advertisement for Rajnigandha *paan masala*. Set in London, the advert shows an Indian tycoon stopping his car in front of the East India Company's headquarters and telling his secretary that he wants to buy the firm: 'they ruled us for 200 years, and now it's our turn to rule'. And perhaps it is. In 2010, the right to use the East India Company trademarks was bought by Sanjiv Mehta, an Indian entrepreneur. The first expression of the new Company is a shop selling luxury goods – teas, coffees, chocolates – in London's West End, including the 'Queen Victoria Empire' trunk, costing some £2,000. For Mehta, 'as an Indian, I had this huge feeling of redemption – this indescribable feeling of owning a company that once owned us'.[12] As an entrepreneur, Mehta believes that 'the East India Company is one of the most recognised brands in the world: over two billion people know of its history', seeing his role as the 'custodian of this great brand'. A new romanticism of the East India Company is being born, this time coming out of India.

FUTURE FLOWERINGS

If there is to be hope of creating a positive future, the Company's role in the shared pasts of Europe and Asia need to be confronted. For the writer Ben Okri, 'nations and peoples are largely the stories they feed themselves', and 'if they tell themselves lies, they will suffer the future consequences of those lies'. But, continues Okri, 'if they tell themselves stories that face their own truths, they will free their histories for future flowerings'.[13] It is with a view to these 'future flowerings' that the East India Company has to be examined in the twenty-first century.

The East India Company's story is ultimately a tragedy, the tale of an institution that generated great wealth, but also great harm, an institution that was ultimately doomed by the flaws in its corporate design. This story has much to teach the twenty-first century about the dangers of unchecked corporate power and the enduring capacity of people to press for justice. As interest in the Company's relevance for today's world grows, a full reckoning is long overdue. An honest confrontation with the corporate origins of the modern age can help to illuminate both our history and stimulate renewed action to align corporations with the wider public interest.

Knowing the Company's story, the obligation is to remember and then to act. This is what motivated those like Edmund Burke who

championed the cause of justice in the eighteenth century, without hope of either personal reward or, indeed, of success. At the end of his life, Burke wrote to his young friend and literary executor, French Laurence, to communicate what he still valued in his long political and literary career. Known today for his conservative defence of social hierarchy during the French Revolution, Burke told Laurence that everything apart from his work to bring justice to India should be forgotten. His outrage burning once more, Burke damned the way that the Company had turned its relations with India into 'nothing more than an opportunity of gratifying the lowest of their purposes, the lowest of their passions'. Unlike Macaulay, with his bitter scorn for all things Asian, Burke continued to argue for an ethical equality between East and West. But this had been violated through the Company's acquisition and subsequent oppression of India. In the process, Europe had incurred an enormous moral deficit. 'If ever Europe recovers its civilisation', Burke concluded, then his 'work will be useful'. And summoning his own generation and those to come to face the full reality of the East India Company, Burke calls out from the eighteenth century, 'Remember! Remember! Remember![14]

Notes

INTRODUCTION

1. Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations*, New York: Random House, 1994, p.693.
2. Edmund Burke, Speech to Parliament, 1 December 1783.
3. Karl Marx, 'The British Rule in India', *New York Daily Tribune*, 25 June 1853.

1: THE HIDDEN WOUND

1. Edward Edwards, *Anecdotes of Painters*, quoted in William Foster, *Catalogue of Paintings, Statues etc. in the India Office*, London, 1921, p.57.
2. Accounts differ whether the river god is the Thames or the Ganges.
3. See Kees Zandvliet, *The Dutch Encounter with Asia, 1600–1650*, Amsterdam: Rijksmuseum, 2002.
4. In 2010, £2,500,000 from 1757 was worth £262,000,000 and £234,000 from 1757 is worth £24,500,000 using the retail price index: see <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/12].
5. Alexander Dow, *History of Hindostan*, 1773, quoted in Sushil Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire: Plassey Revolution of 1757*, New Delhi: Manohar, 2000, p.18.
6. Ninth Report of the Select Committee, July 1783, in P.J. Marshall (ed.), *Writings and Speeches of Edmund Burke*, V, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1981, p.232.
7. Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Wealth of Nations*, book I, chap. VIII, New York: The Modern Library, 1994 [1776], p.84.
8. 'To the Tradesmen and Mechanics of Pennsylvania', 4 December 1773.
9. Ninth Report, in Marshall, *Writings and Speeches of Burke*, V, p.226.
10. Lawrence Norfolk, *Lemprière's Dictionary*, London: Minerva, 1996.
11. John Keay, *The Honourable Company*, London: HarperCollins, 1993, p.219.
12. Daniel Defoe, *A Tour Through the Whole Island of Great Britain* [1724–26], London: Folio Society, 2006, p.182.
13. James Noorthouck, *New History of London*, quoted in William Foster, *The East India House*, London, 1924, p.133.
14. Quoted in Anthony Sampson, *Company Man: The Rise and Fall of Corporate Life*, London: HarperCollins, 1996, p.21.
15. Olwen Campbell, *Thomas Love Peacock*, London: Arthur Barker, 1953, p.54.
16. Prior to the construction of the new building, there was a plaque, which stated 'Site of East India House, 1726–1861'.
17. Romesh Chunder Dutt, *The Economic History of India under Early British Rule (1757–1837)*, London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co., 1908, p.xii.
18. Jawaharlal Nehru, *The Discovery of India*, London: Meridian Books, 1946, p.248.
19. Gurcharan Das, *India Unbound*, New Delhi: Penguin India, 2002.

20. Quoted in 'Enron's Abuse of Power', *Multinational Monitor*, vol. 18, no. 9, September 1997.
21. Arundhati Roy, *The Algebra of Infinite Justice*, London: Flamingo, 2002, p.146.
22. Sandip Roy, 'Enron in India: the Giant's First Fall', Pacific News Service, 8 February 2002.
23. See *Rediff Business Special*, 26 May 2000 or *Tehelka*, 14 February 2004.
24. Sowmya Sundar and Suresh Krishnamurthy, 'Foreigners hold 30pc shares in nifty cos', *Business Line*, 28 March 2004.
25. Arvind Virmani, 'Economic Reforms: Policy and Institutions – Some Lessons from Indian Reforms', ICRIER, New Delhi, January 2004.
26. See the speech of Shri Shankar Roy Chowdhury on patent reform, Rajya Sabha debates, 23 March 2005.
27. Patrick Gillam and Mervyn Davies, Sponsor's Foreword in Antony Farrington, *Trading Places*, London: The British Library, 2002.
28. Rod Eddington, 'Only the world's favourite empires last', *Financial Times*, 14 July 2003.
29. See <www.theeastindiacompany.com> [last consulted 23/02/2001].
30. William Dalrymple, quoted in Archie Baron, *An Indian Affair*, London: Channel 4 Books, 2001, p.110.
31. William Dalrymple, *White Mughals*, London: HarperCollins, 2003, p.501.
32 John Seeley, *The Expansion of England* (Lectures, 1883), London: Macmillan & Co, 1914, p.207.
33. Maurice Collis, *British Merchant Adventurers*, London: William Collins, 1942, pp.7 & 34.
34. <www.thetruthabouttradingplaces.org.uk> [last consulted 24/06/02] site no long working.
35. *Gentleman's Magazine*, March 1767, pp.100–1.
36. *Gentleman's Magazine*, April 1767, p.152.
37. Nehru, *The Discovery of India*, p.266.
38. Richard Clarke, 'The Nabob' (1773), quoted in Jack P. Greene, *Arenas of Asiatic Plunder*, 2003, see <www.uga.edu/colonialseminar/AsiaticPlunders.pdf> [last consulted 24/10/2005].

2: THIS IMPERIOUS COMPANY

1. Jean Sutton, *Lords of the East*, London: Conway Maritime Press, 2000, p.94.
2. Quoted in Rozina Visram, *Asians in Britain: 400 Years of History*, London: Pluto Press, 2002, p.19.
3. Huw Bowen, John McAleer & Robert Blyth, *Monsoon Traders*, London: Scala, 2011, p.13.
4. Thomas Babington Macaulay, *The History of England in the 18th Century* [1849], London: Folio Society, 1980, p.183.
5. Kirti N. Chaudhuri, *The Trading World of Asia and the East India Company 1660–1760*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1978, p.21.
6. Fernand Braudel, *Civilization and Capitalism*, vol. 2: *The Wheels of Commerce*, London: Collins, 1982, p.436.
7. See Ron Harris, *Institutional Innovations: Theories of the Firm and the Formation of the East India Company*, Berkeley Program in Law and Economics Working Paper no. 161, 2004, p.49.
8. Philip Lawson, *The East India Company*, London: Longman, 1993, p.21.

9. See Ron Harris, 'Law, Finance and the First Corporations', in James J. Heckman, Robert L. Nelson & Lee Cabatingan, *Global Perspectives on the Rule of Law*, London: Routledge, 2009.
10. See J. Matthijs de Jongh, 'Shareholder Activists *Avant la Lettre*: The 'Complaining Participants' in the Dutch East India Company 1622–25', in Jonathan G.S. Koppell (ed.), *Origins of Shareholder Advocacy*, New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2011.
11. Quoted in Huw Bowen, *Revenue and Reform*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1991, p.39.
12. See Santhi Hejeebu, 'Contract Enforcement in the English East India Company', Cornell College, July 2004; also in *Journal of Economic History*, vol. 65, no. 2, 2005, pp.1–27.
13. See Ann M. Carlos and Stephen Nicholas, 'Giants of an Earlier Capitalism: The Chartered Trading Companies as Modern Multinational corporations', *Business History Review*, vol. 62, no. 3, Autumn 1988.
14. *Gentleman's Magazine*, July 1767, p.348.
15. See 'BBC: Cardinals of the Air', in Andrew Simms & David Boyle, *Eminent Corporations*, London: Constable & Robinson, 2010.
16. Chaudhuri, *The Trading World of Asia*, p.13.
17. Timothy Alborn, *Conceiving Companies*, London: Routledge, 1998, p.2.
18. Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Wealth of Nations*, book IV, chap. VIII, pp.692–3.
19. Philip Francis, letter to William Ellis, January 1777, quoted in Ranajit Guha, *A Rule of Property for Bengal*: *An Essay on the Idea of Permanent Settlement*, London: Orient Longman, 1982, p.93.
20. See Kenneth Pomeranz, *The Great Divergence*, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2000, p.198.
21. Frank Partnoy, *Infectious Greed: How Deceit and Risk Corrupted the Financial Markets*, London: Profile Books, 2004, p.4.
22. Sutton, *Lords of the East*, p.25.
23. Ibid., p.40.
24. Pomeranz, *The Great Divergence*, p.42.
25. Thomas Friedman, *New York Times*, 28 March 1999.
26. Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, book IV, chap. III, p.527.
27. William Bolts, *Considerations on Indian Affairs* [1772], in Patrick Tuck (ed.), *The East India Company: 1600–1858*, London: Routledge, 1998, pp.iv–v.
28. Amnesty International, *Clouds of Injustice – Bhopal disaster 20 years on*, London: Amnesty International Publications, 2004.
29. *Gentleman's Magazine*, April 1767, p.152.
30. P.J. Marshall, *Problems of Empire: Britain and India 1757–1813*, London: George Allen & Unwin, 1968, p.17.
31. Karl Marx, 'The Government of India', *New York Tribune*, 20 July 1853.

3: OUT OF THE SHADOWS

1. Willke Jeeninga, *The East Indies House and St Jorishof*, Utrecht: Wanders Uitgevers, 1995.
2. Els M. Jacobs, *In Pursuit of Pepper and Tea: The Story of the Dutch East India Company*, Amsterdam: Netherlands Maritime Museum, 1991, p.16.
3. Jeeninga, *The East Indies House*, p.38.

4. David Landes, *The Wealth and Poverty of Nations*, London: Little, Brown and Company, 1998, p.143.
5. Henry Hobhouse, *Seeds of Change: Six Plants that Transformed Mankind*, London: Papermac, 1999, p.xiii.
6. Holden Furber, 'Rival Empires of Trade 1600–1800', in *Maritime India*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2004 [1976], p.231.
7. Richard Hall, *Empires of the Monsoon*, London: HarperCollins, 1996, p.172.
8. Ibid., p.190, quotes Joao de Barros's justification of this policy: 'It is true that there does exist a common right to all to navigate the seas, and in Europe we acknowledge the right which others hold against us, but that right does not extend beyond Europe, and therefore the Portuguese by the strengths of her fleets are justified in compelling all Moors to take out safe-conducts under pain of confiscation or death. The Moors and the Gentiles are outside the law of Jesus Christ, which is the true law which everyone has to keep under pain of damnation to eternal fire. If then the soul be so condemned, what right has the body to the privileges of our laws?'
9. Described by Gaspar Correa in *The Three Voyages of Vasco da Gama* and quoted in Hall, *Empires of the Monsoon*, p.198.
10. Quoted in Om Prakash, *European Commercial Enterprise in Pre-Colonial India*, New Delhi: Cambridge University Press, 2000, p.139.
11. Ibid., p.48.
12. William Logan, *Malabar Manual*, New Delhi: Asian Educational Services, 2000, p.308.
13. Giles Milton, *Nathaniel's Nutmeg*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, London, p.70.
14. Quoted in Furber, 'Rival Empires of Trade', p.32.
15. Logan, *Malabar Manual*, p.70.
16. See Ramkrishna Mukherjee, *The Rise and Fall of the East India Company*, New York: Monthly Review Press, 1974, p.393.
17. John Keay, *The Honourable Company*, London: HarperCollins, 1993, p.113.
18. Quoted in Mukherjee, *Rise and Fall of the East India Company*, p.73.
19. See Furber, 'Rival Empires of Trade', p.91.
20. Keay, *The Honourable Company*, p.150.
21. Thomas Babington Macaulay, *History of England Since the Accession of James II*, 1848–60, chap. XVIII.
22. Kirti N. Chaudhuri, *The Trading World of Asia and the East India Company 1660–1760*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1978, p.77.
23. Daniel Defoe, *Anatomy of Exchange Alley*, quoted in Maureen Waller, *1700: Scenes from London Life*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 2000, p.243.
24. For a fascinating account of Child's political economy see Stephen Pincus, 'Whigs, Political Economy and the Revolution of 1688–89', in David Womersley, Paddy Bullard &Abigail Williams, *Cultures of Whiggism: New Essays on English Literature and Culture in the Long Eighteenth Century*, Delaware: University of Delaware Press, 2005.
25. Quoted in John E. Wills, *1688 – A Global History*, London: Granta, 2002, p.285.
26. East India Company to Fort St George, 9 June 1686, quoted in Pincus, 'Whigs', p.12.
27. East India Company to Fort St George, quoted in Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire*, p.68.

28. Quoted in Jean Sutton, *The East India Company's Maritime Service (1746–1834),* Woodbridge: Boydell Press, 2010, p.6.
29. Newsletter from London, 14 August 1688, quoted in Pincus, 'Whigs', p.14.
30. Macaulay, *History of England*, chap. XVIII.
31. Philip Lawson, *The East India Company*, London: Longman, 1993, p.53.
32. Report of Sir Thomas Cooke's Examination, *House of Lords Journal*, vol. 15, 24 April 1695.
33. Sir Basil Firebrace's Examination, *House of Lords Journal*, vol.15, 27 April 1695.
34. Edward Chancellor, *Devil Take the Hindmost*, London: Macmillan, 1999, p.50.
35. Quoted in P.J Thomas, *Mercantilism and the East India Trade*, London: King & Son, 1926, p.111.
36. 'In 2010, £200,000 from 1699 is worth £21,800,000 using the retail price index.' See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/2012].
37. Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Wealth of Nations*, book V, chap. I, art. 1, New York: The Modern Library, 1994 [1776], p.808.
38. Lucy Sutherland, *The East India Company in Eighteenth-Century Politics*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1952, p.17.
39. Letter to an MP, 1708, published in *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1781, p.1018.
40. Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, book V, chap. I, art. 1.
41. Quoted in Brian Gardner, *East India Company*, London: Rupert Hart-Davis, 1971, p.53.
42. Quoted by Sushil Chaudhury, *From Prosperity to Decline: 18th Century Bengal*, New Delhi: Manohar, 1999, p.24.
43. J.H. Plumb, *England in the 18th Century*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1990, p.171.
44. 31 January 1708, *Weekly Review*, quoted in Prasannan Parthasarathi, 'Rethinking Wages and Competitiveness in the 18th Century: Britain and South India', *Past and Present*, no. 158, February 1998.
45. Robert J. Allen (ed.), *Addison and Steele*, Orlando: Rinehart, 1974, p.212.
46. Quoted in S. Muthiah, *Madras Rediscovered*, Chennai: East West Books, 2004, p.39.
47. Anon, The Trade to India critically and calmly considered (1720) quoted in Thomas, *Mercantilism and the East India Trade*, pp.134–5.
48. Quoted in James Mill, *History of British India* [1858 edn,10 vols], vol. III, book IV, chap. 1, London: Routledge/Thoemes Press, 1997, p.30.
49. Furber, 'Rival Empires of Trade', p.130

4: THE BENGAL REVOLUTION

1. William Bolts, *Considerations on Indian Affairs* [1772], in Patrick Tuck (ed.), *The East India Company: 1600–1858*, London: Routledge, 1998, p.84.
2. Krishna Dutta, *Calcutta*, Northampton, MA: Interlink Books 2003, p.55.
3. 'In 2010, £1,000,000 from 1797 is worth £80,800,000 using the retail price index.' See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/12].
4. Fernand Braudel, *Civilization and Capitalism*, vol. 3: *The Perspective of the World*, London: Collins, 1984, p.489.
5. See, for example, the March 1767 issue of *Gentleman's Magazine*, p.99.
6. Philip Francis, quoted in Joseph Parkes and Herman Merivale, *Memoirs of Sir Philip Francis*, London: Longman, Green & Co., 1867, II, p.18.

7. Quoted in Mike Davis, *Late Victorian Holocausts*, London: Verso, 2002, p.294.
8. Uzramma, *A Brief History of Cotton in India*, Hyderabad: Independent Handloom Research Group, 2002.
9. P.J. Marshall, *East Indian Fortunes: The British in Bengal in the Eighteenth Century*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1976, p.33.
10. Om Prakash, *European Commercial Enterprise in Pre-Colonial India*, New Delhi: Cambridge University Press, 2000, p.121.
11. Sushil Chaudhury, *From Prosperity to Decline: 18th Century Bengal*, New Delhi: Manohar, 1999, p.206.
12. Sudipta Sen, *Empire of Free Trade: the East India Company and the Making of the Colonial Marketplace*, Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1998, p.13.
13. Quoted in Chaudhury, *From Prosperity to Decline*, p.35.
14. Marshall, *East Indian Fortunes*, p.43.
15. Quoted in Chaudhury, *From Prosperity to Decline*, p.316.
16. Quoted in Sushil Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire: Plassey Revolution of 1757*, New Delhi: Manohar, 2000, p.69.
17. Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Wealth of Nations*, book V, chap. 3, art. 1, New York: The Modern Library, 1994 [1776], p.809.
18. Quoted in John Keay, *The Honourable Company*, London: HarperCollins, 1993, p.299.
19. Quoted in Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire*, p.42.
20. Sen, *Empire of Free Trade*, p.74.
21. Ibid., p.74.
22. *Gentleman's Magazine*, July 1757, p.309.
23. Quoted in Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire*, p.111.
24. Quoted in Chaudhury, *From Prosperity to Decline*, p.322.
25. Brian Gardner, *East India Company*, London: Rupert Hart-Davis, 1971, p.84.
26. Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire*, p.86.
27. Robert Clive, Letter to Directors, 26 July 1757.
28. Jean Law, quoted in Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire*, p.119.
29. Kirti N. Chaudhuri, *The Trading World of Asia and the East India Company 1660–1760*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1978, p.109.
30. Robert Clive to the Secret Committee of the Directors, 26 July 1757, <www.mssc.edu/projectsouthasia/history>.
31. Robert Harvey, *Clive: Life and Death of a British Emperor*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1998, p.193.
32. Clive, quoted in ibid., p.251.
33. Clive Mathieson, 'Vodafone chastised by vote over bonus', *The Times*, London, 28 July 2000.
34. Philip Mason, *The Men Who Ruled India*, London: Jonathan Cape, 1985, p.37.
35. Thomas Macaulay, 'Essay on Lord Clive', January 1840.
36. Chaudhury, *The Prelude to Empire*, p.166.
37. Luke Scrafton, *Reflections on the Government of Indostan* [1763], quoted in R. Palme Dutt, *India Today*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1940, p.113.
38. Romesh Chunder Dutt, *The Economic History of India under Early British Rule (1757–1837)*, London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co., 1908, p.23.
39. Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, book IV, chap. VII, p.687.
40. 'In 2010, £300,000 from 1759 is worth £35,800,000 using the retail price index.' See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/2010].

41. ‘In 2010, £1,650,900 from 1765 is worth £176,000,000 using the retail price index.’ See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/12].
42. Robert Clive, Letter to the Directors, September 1765, quoted in Bolts, *Considerations*, p.154.
43. <http://banglapedia.search.bd/HT/C_0290.HTM>.
44. James Mill, *History of British India* [1858 edn, 10 vols], vol. III, book IV, chap. IX, London: Routledge/Thoemes Press, 1997, p.359.
45. Braudel, *Civilization and Capitalism*, vol. 3, p.496.
46. Prasannan Parthasarathi, ‘Rethinking Wages and Competitiveness in the 18th Century: Britain and South India’, *Past and Present*, no. 158, February 1998.
47. ‘Of the mode of providing the Company’s Investment’, quoted in Ranajit Guha, *A Rule of Property for Bengal*: *An Essay on the Idea of Permanent Settlement*, London: Orient Longman, 1982, p.136.
48. Hameeda Hossain, ‘The Company’s Controls over Textile Production’, *Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bangladesh*, June 1983, offprint, p.13.
49. Bolts, *Considerations*, p.193.
50. Ibid., p.74.
51. Ibid., p.194.
52. Shahid Ali, from the ‘Dacca Gauzes’, in *The Half-Inch Himalayas*, Middletown: Wesleyan University Press, 1987.
53. Quoted in Harvey, *Clive*, p.309.
54. Holden Furber, ‘Rival Empires of Trade 1600–1800’, in *Maritime India*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2004 [1976], p.177.

5: THE GREAT EAST INDIAN CRASH

1. Quoted in Jeremy Bernstein, *Dawning of the Raj: The Life and Trials of Warren Hastings*, London: Aurum Press, 2000, p.66.
2. Quoted in Penelope Hunting, *Cutlers Gardens*, London: Standard Life, 1984. Reproduced by permission of The Society of Authors as the literary representative of the Estate of John Masefield.
3. Lucy Sutherland, *The East India Company in Eighteenth-Century Politics*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1952, p.47.
4. Macaulay, ‘Essay on Clive’, 1840.
5. Quoted in John Keay, *The Honourable Company*, London: HarperCollins, 1993, p.324.
6. Robert Clive, *A Letter to the Proprietors of the East Indian Stock*, London: J. Nourse, 1764, pp.2 & 63.
7. Quoted in Romesh Chunder Dutt, *The Economic History of India under Early British Rule (1757–1837)*, London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co., 1908, p.37.
8. Quoted in Huw Bowen, ‘Lord Clive and Speculation in East India Company Stock, 1776’, *Historical Journal*, 1987, p.910.
9. Quoted in James Mill, *History of British India* [1858 edn,10 vols], vol. III, book IV, chap. VII, London: Routledge/Thoemes Press, 1997, p.300.
10. Archie Baron, *An Indian Affair*, London: Channel 4 Books, 2001, p.80.
11. Mill, *History of British India*, III, IV, chap. VII, p.307.
12. *Gentleman’s Magazine*, December 1769, p.618.
13. *Gentleman’s Magazine*, April 1769, p.211.

14. Quoted in Lucy Sutherland, *The East India Company in Eighteenth-Century Politics*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1952, p.192.
15. Cornelius Walford, 'Famines in History', *Journal of the Statistical Society*, vol. 41, 1878, pp.442–3.
16. Walford, quoted in Mike Davis, *Late Victorian Holocausts*, London: Verso, 2002, p.287.
17. Davis, *Late Victorian Holocausts*, p.286.
18. Quoted in R. Palme Dutt, *India Today*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1940, p.115.
19. *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1771, p.402.
20. Ibid., p.403.
21. Quoted in Sudipta Sen, *Empire of Free Trade: the East India Company and the Making of the Colonial Marketplace*, Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1998, p.147.
22. Dutt, *The Economic History of India*, p.52.
23. George Chesney, quoted in Walford, 'Famines in History', p.519.
24. Quoted in Chandra Prakash N. Sinha, *From Decline to Destruction: Agriculture in Bihar during Early British Rule*, New Delhi: Manohar, 1997, p.25.
25. Rajat Datta, *Society, Economy and the Market: Commercialisation in Rural Bengal c.1760–1800*, New Delhi: Manohar, 2000, p.264.
26. Cornwallis, quoted in ibid., p.264.
27. Quoted in Ramkrishna Mukherjee, *The Rise and Fall of the East India Company*, New York: Monthly Review Press, 1974, p.353.
28. Dean Mahomet, *The Travels of Dean Mahomet*, Berkeley: University of California Press, 1997, pp.35–6.
29. Ibid., p.54.
30. See Sugata Bose, *Peasant Labour and Colonial Capital: Rural Bengal since 1770*, Cambridge, New York: Cambridge University Press, 1993.
31. William Bolts, *Considerations on Indian Affairs* [1772], in Patrick Tuck (ed.), *The East India Company: 1600–1858*, London: Routledge, 1998, p.x.
32. Derived from P.J. Marshall, *East Indian Fortunes: The British in Bengal in the Eighteenth Century*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1976, Table VI, p.232, Table VII, p.241 and Table VIII, p.250.
33. 'In 2010, £1,086,255 from 1770 is worth £117,000,000 using the retail price index.' See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/2010].
34. *Gentleman's Magazine*, April 1769, p.197.
35. Quoted in Marshall, *East Indian Fortunes*, p.200.
36. Quoted in Sutherland, *The East India Company*, p.137.
37. Quoted in Harry Verelst, *A View on the Rise, Progress and Present State of the English Government in Bengal*, London [1772], in Tuck, *The East India Company*, p.123.
38. Quoted in Bolts, *Considerations*, p.53.
39. *Gentleman's Magazine*, December 1770, p.587.
40. Quoted in Baron, *An Indian Affair*, p.79.
41. *Gentleman's Magazine*, 30 March 1771, p.141.
42. Bolts, *Considerations*, p.216.
43. Francis Sykes to Warren Hastings, 14 September 1773, quoted in Willem Kuiters, *The British in Bengal 1756–1773*, Paris: Les Indes Savantes, 2002, p.68.
44. *Gentleman's Magazine*, December 1769, p.618.

45. Quoted in Charles Kindleberger, *Manias, Panics and Crashes – A History of Financial Crises*, New York: John Wiley & Sons, 2000, p.91.

6: REGULATING THE COMPANY

1. Quoted in Ian Simpson Ross, *The Life of Adam Smith*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1995, p.241.
2. Quoted in Robert Heilbroner, *The Worldly Philosophers*, New York: Touchstone, 1999, p.55.
3. Adam Smith, *An Inquiry into the Wealth of Nations*, book IV, chap. IX, New York: The Modern Library, 1998 [1776], p.745.
4. Ibid., IV, chap. II, p.485.
5. Ibid., I, chap. XI, p.288.
6. Ibid., I, chap. XI, p.287.
7. Ibid., IV, chap. VII, p.675.
8. Ibid., IV, chap. VII, p.693.
9. Ibid., I, chap. XI, p.288.
10. Ibid., I, chap. X, part 2, p.148.
11. See Lucy Sutherland, *The East India Company in Eighteenth-Century Politics*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1952, p.38.
12. Quoted in David Korten, *When Corporations Rule the World*, London: Earthscan, 1996, p.56.
13. Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, IV, chap. VII, pp. 681–2.
14. Ibid., I, chap. XI, part 1, p.170.
15. Ibid., IV, chap. VII, p.692.
16. *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1767, p.151.
17. See Jack P. Greene, *Arenas of Asiatic Plunder*, 2003, <www.uga.edu/colonial-seminar/AsiaticPlunders.pdf> [last consulted 24/10/2005], p.5.
18. Samuel Foote, The Nabob – A Comedy in Three Acts, London: T. Cadell, 1773, p.48.
19. Ibid., pp.39–40.
20. Quoted in Nicholas B. Dirks, *The Scandal of Empire*, Cambridge: Harvard, 2006, p.56.
21. Quoted in *Gentleman's Magazine*, 13 April 1772, p.303.
22. Quoted in Robert Harvey, *Clive: Life and Death of a British Emperor*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1998, p.343.
23. Sutherland, *The East India Company*, p.251.
24. *Annual Register*, April 1773.
25. Harvey, *Clive*, p.358.
26. Quoted in ibid., p.372.
27. Quoted from the Ninth Report of the Select Committee, in P.J. Marshall (ed.), *Writings and Speeches of Edmund Burke*, V, Oxford: Clarendon Press, p.200.
28. Jean Sutton, *The East India Company's Maritime Service (1746–1834),* Woodbridge: Boydell Press, 2010, p.120.
29. *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1773, p.637.
30. Boston handbill, 28 November 1773, quoted in Thom Hartmann, *Unequal Protection: The Rise of Corporate Dominance and the Theft of Human Rights*, Emmaus, PA: Rodale, 2004, p.58.
31. Benjamin Woods Labaree, *The Boston Tea Party*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1964, p.73.

32. Thom Hartmann, *Unequal Protection: The Rise of Corporate Dominance and the Theft of Human Rights*, Emmaus, PA: Rodale, 2004, p.56.
33. *Pennsylvania Chronicle*, 15 November 1773, quoted in Leo Huberman, *We, the People*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1940.
34. Hartmann, *Unequal Protection*, pp.56–7.
35. Jane Anne Morris, ‘Corporations for the Seventh Generation’, in *Defying Corporations, Defining Democracy*, ed. Dean Ruiz, New York: The Apex Press, 2001, p.82.
36. William Bolts, *Considerations on Indian Affairs* [1772], in Patrick Tuck (ed.), *The East India Company: 1600–1858*, London: Routledge, 1998, p.213.
37. Petition of Gregore Cojamaul and Johannes Padre Rafael, quoted in Bolts, *Considerations*, p.109.
38. ‘In 2010, £9,700 from 1777 is worth £978,000 using the retail price index.’ See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/10].
39. *Annual Register*, December 1774, pp.170–1; see also *Annual Register*, February 1776, p.120.
40. Chapter XVI, ‘The Armenians in London’, in Willem Kuiters, *The British in Bengal 1756–1773*, Paris: Les Indes Savantes, 2002, provides a detailed analysis of these cases.
41. Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, IV, chap. VII, p.666.
42. Quoted in Ross, *Life of Adam Smith*, p.353.
43. Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, V, chap. 1, p.812.
44. Ibid., p.800.
45. Ibid., art. 1, p.814.
46. See Richard L. Grossman and Frank T. Adams, *Taking Care of Business* [1993], POCLAD, 2002.
47. John Kenneth Galbraith, *A History of Economics*, London: Hamish Hamilton, 1987, p.71.
48. Karl Polanyi, *Origins of Our Times – The Great Transformation*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1945, p.13.
49. Smith, *Wealth of Nations*, IV, chap. V, p.563.
50. Ibid., p.564.

7: JUSTICE WILL BE DONE

1. Romesh Chunder Dutt, *The Economic History of India under Early British Rule (1757–1837)*, London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co., 1908, p.29.
2. Joseph Parkes and Herman Merivale, *Memoirs of Sir Philip Francis*, London: Longman, Green & Co., 1867, II, p.18.
3. Dutt, *The Economic History of India*, p.69.
4. Chandra Prakash N. Sinha, *From Decline to Destruction: Agriculture in Bihar during Early British Rule*, New Delhi: Manohar, 1997, p.2.
5. See Brian Inglis, *The Opium War*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1976, p.26.
6. See Roy Moxham, *The Great Hedge of India*, London: Constable, 2001, p.45.
7. Thomas Babington Macaulay, *Hastings*, New York: Chautauqua Press, 1886, p.39.
8. Ibid., p.40.
9. Jeremy Bernstein, *Dawning of the Raj: The Life and Trials of Warren Hastings*, London: Aurum Press, 2000, p.83.

10. Quoted in Ranajit Guha, *A Rule of Property for Bengal*: *An Essay on the Idea of Permanent Settlement* , London: Orient Longman, 1982, p.148.
11. P.J. Marshall, *The Impeachment of Warren Hastings*, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1965, p.169.
12. Brian Inglis, *The Opium War*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1976, p.30.
13. See Narahari Kaviraj, *A Peasant Uprising in Bengal – 1783*, New Delhi: People's Publishing House, 1972.
14. Bankim Chandra Chatterji, *Anandamath*, New Delhi: Orient Paperbacks, 2000, p.40.
15. William Cowper, 'Expostulation', in *The Poetical Works of William Cowper*, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1913, p.51.
16. Quoted in *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1782, p.469.
17. Quoted in Michael Fry, *The Dundas Despotism*, Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992, p.114.
18. Johnstone, November 1782, quoted in *Gentleman's Magazine*, 1782, p.548.
19. Ninth Report, quoted in Marshall, *Writings and Speeches of Burke*, V, p.222.
20. Ibid., p.236.
21. Ibid., p.269.
22. Ibid., p.291.
23. Edmund Burke, Speech to Parliament, 1 December 1783.
24. See *History Today*, June 2001, p.26.
25. *Gentleman's Magazine*, August 1784, p.702.
26. C.H. Philips, *The East India Company 1784–1834*, Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1940, p.34.
27. William Atkinson, quoted in ibid., p.34, n.1.
28. Letter to William Eden, 17 May 1784, quoted in Stanley Ayling, *Edmund Burke*, London: Cassell, 1988, p.162.
29. William Burke, quoted in Ayling, *Edmund Burke*., p.168.
30. Edmund Burke, Speech in Parliament on the Nabob of Arcot's Debts, 15 February 1785.
31. Philip Francis, Speech in Parliament on the Debts of the Nabobs of Arcot, 7 July 1806.
32. Twenty-sixth Report of the Commissioners for the Nabob of Arcot's Debts, 1830, p.28.
33. Thomas Babington Macaulay, 'Essay on Clive', 1840.
34. Hastings Evidence, quoted in Marshall, *The Impeachment of Warren Hastings*, p.108.
35. Quoted in Ayling, *Edmund Burke*, p.170.
36. Quoted in Michael Fry, *The Dundas Despotism*, Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992, p.122.
37. Richard Brinsley Sheridan, Speech on the Impeachment of Warren Hastings, 7 February 1788.
38. Edmund Burke, Speech on the Impeachment of Warren Hastings, 15–19 February 1788.
39. See Ninth Report, in Marshall, *Writings and Speeches of Edmund Burke*, V, p.425.
40. John Morley, *Burke*, London: Macmillan, 1892, p.191.
41. See 'Edmund Burke on the Perils of Empire', in Uday Singh Mehta, *Liberalism and Empire*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1999, pp. 153–89.
42. Quoted in ibid., p.186.

43. Morley, *Burke*, p.197.
44. Richard Brinsley Sheridan, *The Rivals*, London: Samuel French, Act V, Scene III, p.68.
45. See Marshall, *The Impeachment of Warren Hastings*, p.170.
46. John Evans, *The Gentleman Usher: The Life & Times of George Dempster, 1732–1818*, Barnsley: Pen & Sword, 2005, p.130.

8: THE TOXIC EXCHANGE

1. Quoted in Joshua Rowntree, *The Imperial Drug Trade*, London: Methuen & Co, 1906, p.3.
2. Roy Moxham, *The Brief History of Tea: The Extraordinary Story of the World's Favourite Drink*, London: Robinson, 2009, p.25.
3. I am indebted to Julia Lovell for her insights on this section.
4. See Maurice Collis, *Foreign Mud*, London: Faber & Faber, 1997, pp.6–7.
5. Robert Bickers, *The Scramble for China: Foreign Devils in the Qing Empire 1832–1914*, London: Allen Lane, 2011, p.31.
6. Harry G. Gelber, *The Dragon and the Foreign Devils*, London: Bloomsbury, 2008, p.90.
7. Collis, *Foreign Mud*, p.45.
8. Listed in *Dr Morrison's Commercial Guide* (1834) quoted in Collis, *Foreign Mud*, p.53.
9. Hsin-pao Chang, *Commissioner Lin and the Opium War*, New York: Norton, 1964, p.5.
10. Gelber, *The Dragon and the Foreign Devils*, p.155.
11. Hoh-cheung Mui and Lorna H. Mui, *The Management of Monopoly: A Study of the English East India Company's Conduct of its Tea Trade, 1784–1833,* Vancouver: University of British Columbia Press, 1984, p.127.
12. Quoted in Rowntree, *The Imperial Drug Trade*, p.12.
13. Brian Inglis, *The Opium War*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1976, p.24.
14. Anon, *The Defence of Warren Hastings at the Bar of the House of Commons*, London: J. Stockdale, 1786, p.146.
15. Edmund Burke, Articles of Charges of High Crimes and Misdemeanors against Warren Hastings, J. Debrett, 1786, pp.227–8.
16. Appendix to the India Courier Extraordinary: Proceedings of Parliament Relating to Warren Hastings, Vol. VI, 1787.
17. Inglis, *The Opium War*, p.30.
18. Quoted in Collis, *Foreign Mud*, pp.92–3.
19. Aubrey Singer, *The Lion and the Dragon: The Story of the First British Embassy to the Court of the Emperor Qianlong* 1792–94, London: Barrie & Jenkins, 1992, p.102.
20. Ibid., p.116.
21. Quoted in ibid., pp.180–1.
22. Ibid., p.192.
23. Ibid., p.172.
24. Michael Greenberg, *British Trade and the Opening of China 1800–1842*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1969, p.110.
25. See Sarah Rose, *For All the Tea in China*, London: Arrow Books, 2010, p.1.
26. Greenberg, *British Trade and the Opening of China*, p.104.
27. Quoted in Inglis, *The Opium War*, p.49.

28. Quoted in Rowntree, *The Imperial Drug Trade*, p.22.
29. Quoted in Inglis, *The Opium War*, p.62.
30. Ibid., p.65.
31. Charles Grant, Speech to House of Commons, 13 June 1833.
32. Inglis, *The Opium War*, p.89.
33. Charles Marjoribanks, *The English Character*, in Ting Man Tsao, *Representing 'Great England' to Qing China in the Age of Free Trade Imperialism: The Circulation of a Tract by Charles Marjoribanks on the China Coast*, Victorians Institute Journal at www.nines.org.
34. John Crawfurd, 'A Sketch of the Commercial Resources and Monetary & Mercantile System of British India [1837]', in Kirti N. Chaudhuri, *The Trading World of Asia and the East India Company 1660–1760*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1978, p.251.
35. Inglis, *The Opium War*, p.92.
36. Chang, *Commissioner Lin and the Opium War*, p.48.
37. Grant, Buckingham and Marjoribanks in Parliamentary debates 13 June 1833.
38. Crawfurd, 'A Sketch of the Commercial Resources', p.281.
39. Extract from Bengal Financial Consultation, 26 April 1833, quoted in Chaudhuri, *The Trading World of Asia*, p.24.
40. 'Free Trade in China', in The Quarterly Review, Vol. L, London: John Murray, 1834, pp.430 –1.
41. William Jardine, 26 January 1839, quoted in Chang, *Commissioner Lin and the Opium War*, p.49.
42. Translated in the Chinese Repository, October 1839, and quoted in Greenberg, *British Trade and the Opening of China*, p.143.
43. Quoted in Arthur Waley, *The Opium War Through Chinese Eye*s, Stanford: Stanford University Press, p.30.
44. Quoted in Lovell, *The Opium War: Drugs, Dreams and the Making of China*, London: Picador, 2011, p.100.
45. Quoted in Inglis, *The Opium War*, p.156.
46. See Bickers, *The Scramble for China*, p.84.
47. Quoted in Greenberg, *British Trade and the Opening of China*, p.214.
48. Quoted in Robert Blake, *Jardine Matheson: Traders of the Far East*, London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1999, p.96.
49. W. Travis Hanes and Frank Sanello, *The Opium Wars*, London: Robson Books, London, 2003, p.157.
50. Lawrence James, *Raj – The Making and Unmaking of British India*, London: Little, Brown & Company, 1999, p.105.
51. Quoted in Moxham, *Brief History of Tea*, p.90.
52. Sarah Rose, *For all the Tea in China*, London: Arrow Books, 2010, p.99.
53. Ibid., p.36.
54. Karl Marx, 'Trade or Opium?', *New York Daily Tribune*, 20 September 1858.
55. Karl Marx, 'Free Trade and Monopoly', *New York Daily Tribune*, 25 September 1858.
56. Blake, *Jardine Matheson*, p.140.
57. Francois Crouzet, *The Victorian Economy*, London: Methuen, 1982, p.353.
58. See <www.dongguantoday.com/museum4.htm> [last consulted 21/10/2011].
59. Lovell, *The Opium War*, p.356.
60. Jardine Matheson, *175 Years of Looking to the Future*, Hong Kong: Jardine Matheson, 2007, pp.7 & 10.

9: A SKULKING POWER

1. Paul Benfield, *Letter to the Court of Directors*, 14 December 1780, p.4.
2. Quoted in *The Case of Paul Benfield*, 1780, p.13.
3. Linda Colley, *Captives*, London: Random House, 2003, p.274.
4. Percival Spear, *A History of India 2*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1970, p.95.
5. Ibid.
6. Romesh Chunder Dutt, *The Economic History of India under Early British Rule (1757–1837)*, London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co., 1908, p.92.
7. Ibid., p.91.
8. See E.P. Thompson, *Customs in Common*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1993.
9. See Ranajit Guha, *A Rule of Property for Bengal*: *An Essay on the Idea of Permanent Settlement* , London: Orient Longman, 1982.
10. John Capper, *The Three Presidencies of India* [1853], New Delhi: Asian Educational Services, 1997, p.281.
11. Quoted in Richard Reeves, *John Stuart Mill: Victorian Firebrand*, London: Atlantic Books, 2007, p.460.
12. Jon Wilson, *The Domination of Strangers*, Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan, 2010, p.116.
13. Letter from Charles Cornwallis to Henry Dundas, 31 December 1790, in Charles Ross (ed.) *Correspondence of Charles, First Marquis Cornwallis*, Vol. 2, London: John Murray, 1859, pp.66–7.
14. David Haliburton, *The Trial of Avadaunum Paupiah*, London: John Murray, 1793, p.1.
15. Walter Scott, *The Surgeon's Daughter,* Edinburgh: Adam and Charles Black, 1863, p.104.
16. Philip Ziegler and Desmond Seward, *Brooks's – A Social History*, London: Constable & Company, p.30.
17. John Seeley, *The Expansion of England* (Lectures, 1883), London: Macmillan & Co, 1914, p.290.
18. Michael Fry, *The Dundas Despotism*, Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992, p.197.
19. Quoted in C.H. Philips, *The East India Company 1784–1834*, Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1940, p.78.
20. Irfan Habib, *Resistance and Modernisation under Haidar Ali & Tipu Sultan*, New Delhi: Tulika, 1999, p.xl.
21. K.N. Panikkar, *Against Lord and State: Religion and Peasant Uprisings in Malabar, 1836–1921*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1992.
22. K. Ravi Raman, *Bondage in Freedom: Colonial Plantations in Southern India 1797–1947*, Centre for Development Studies, Trivandrum, Working Paper no. 327, March 2002, pp.8, 32.
23. Wellington's Supplementary Dispatches, quoted in Lawrence James, *The Iron Duke*, London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1992, p.77.
24. Panikkar, *Against Lord and State*, p.1.
25. Jac Weller, *Wellington in India*, London: Greenhill Books, 1993, p.110.
26. Rajat Datta, Commercialisation, Tribute and the Transition from late Mughal to Early Colonial in India, The *Medieval History Journal*, 6, 2 (2003), p.271.
27. Simon Schama, *A History of Britain*, vol. 2: *The British Wars 1603–1776*, London: BBC Books, 2001, p.496.
28. Quoted in Philips, *The East India Company*, p.219.

29. Huw Bowen, *The Business of Empire*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005, p.235.
30. Henry Wilson's continuation of Mill's *History of India*, vol. VII, 1858, quoted in Ramkrishna Mukherjee, *The Rise and Fall of the East India Company*, New York: Monthly Review Press, 1974, p.404.
31. Syed Muhammed Taifoor, *Glimpses of Old Dhaka*, Dacca: S.M. Perwej, 1956, p.53.
32. Karl Marx, 'The East India Company – Its History and Results', *New York Daily Tribune*, 11 July 1853.
33. Quoted in Karl Marx*, Capital*, vol. 1, chap, 15, sect. V, 'The Strife Between Workman and Machine'.
34. Petition of the East India Company for Relief, 1840, quoted in Kirti N. Chaudhuri, *The Economic Development of India Under the East India Company 1814–1858*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1971, p.27.
35. See Dutt, *The Economic History of India*, pp.300–1.
36. Charles Grant, Speech in Parliament, London: Hansard, 13 June 1833.
37. James Mill, *History of British India* [1858 edn,10 vols], vol. II, London: Routledge/Thoemes Press, 1997, p.132.
38. James Mill, 'Affairs of India', *Edinburgh Review*, 16, 1810, quoted in Man To Leung, *James Mill's Utilitarianism and British Imperialism in India.*
39. James Mill, *History of British India*, VI, p.14.
40. Quoted in William Foster, *The East India House*, London, 1924, pp.205, 202.
41. Quoted in Michael Edwardes, *History of India*, London: Thames & Hudson, London, 1961, p.258.
42. Sir George Birdwood, *Report on the Old Records of the India Office*, London, 1891.
43. Quoted in M. Moir, D. Peers and Lynn Zastoupil, *John Stuart Mill's Encounter with India*, Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1999, p.4.
44. John Stuart Mill, *Representative Government*, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1940 [1861], p.175.
45. Quoted in Edwardes, *History of India*, p.261.
46. Quoted in Richard Reeves, *John Stuart Mill - Victorian Firebrand*, London: Atlantic Books, 2007, p.101.
47. Quoted in James Mill, *History of British India*, I, p.xxx.
48. Quoted in C. Bayly, *Rulers, Townsmen & Bazaars* [1977] in *The C.A. Bayly Omnibus*, Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2010, p.266.
49. Tirthankar Roy, *The Economic History of India, 1857–1947*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2000, pp.33–50. Quoted in Karl Marx, 'The Charter of the East India Company', *New York Daily Tribune*, 9 June 1853.
51. Karl Marx, 'The Government of India', *New York Daily Tribune*, 20 July 1853.
52. Ibid.
53. Karl Marx, 'The Future Results of British Rule in India', *New York Daily Tribune*, 8 August 1853.
54. Karl Marx, 'The British Rule in India', *New York Daily Tribune*, 25 June 1853.
55. Marx, 'Future Results of British Rule'.
56. See Francis Wheen, *Marx*, London: Fourth Estate, 2000, p.188.
57. Edward Said, *Culture and Imperialism*, London: Chatto & Windus, 1993, p.97.
58. See, for example, Stanley Kurtz, 'Democratic Imperialism: A Blueprint', *Policy Review*, no. 118, April/May 2003.
59. *Gentleman's Magazine*, 30 March 1813, p.569.

60. Quoted in Biswamoy Pati (ed.), *The 1857 Rebellion*, Introduction, Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2010, p.xiv .
61. Quoted in Pati, *The 1857 Rebellion*, p.281.
62. Ibid., p.xxiv.
63. Rajat Kanta Roy, 'The Mentality of the Mutiny', in Pati, *The 1857 Rebellion*, p.286.
64. Quoted in Karl Marx, 'The Indian Revolt', *New York Daily Tribune*, 16 September 1857.
65. Charles Dickens, quoted in Lawrence James, *Raj: The Making and Unmaking of British India*, p.283.
66. Karl Marx, 'The Indian Bill', *New York Daily Tribune*, 24 July 1858.
67. 'In 2010, £12,000,000 from 1874 is worth £869,000,000 using the retail price index.' See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/10].
68. Dutt, *The Economic History of India*, p.399.

10: UNFINISHED BUSINESS

1. Alfred Spencer (ed.), *Memoirs of William Hickey* (1823), quoted in Jean Sutton, *The East India Company's Maritime Service (1746–1834),* Woodbridge: Boydell Press, 2010, p.20.
2. Quoted in Michael Greenberg, British Trade and the Opening of China, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2008, p.2.
3. See Russell Sparkes, *From Mortmain to Adam Smith: Historical Insights on the Problem of Corporate Social Responsibility*, London, 2005.
4. See P.B. Buchan, 'Origins of the Knowledge Based Corporation', EBHA Conference, July 2001.
5. Philip Francis, letter to William Ellis, January 1777, quoted in Ranajit Guha, *A Rule of Property for Bengal*: *An Essay on the Idea of Permanent Settlement*, London: Orient Longman, 1982, p.93.
6. Court of Directors, 8 December 1732, quoted in Chaudhury, *From Prosperity to Decline*, p.37.
7. Sinha, quoted in Holden Furber, 'Rival Empires of Trade 1600–1800', in *Maritime India*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2004 [1976], p.177; and Rajat Datta, *Society, Economy and the Market: Commercialisation in Rural Bengal c.1760–1800*, New Delhi: Manohar, 2000, p.357.
8. Romesh Chunder Dutt, *The Economic History of India under Early British Rule (1757–1837)*, London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co., 1908, p.400.
9. 'In 2002, £723,997,917 from 1838 is worth £50,800,000,000 using the retail price index.' See <www.eh.net> [last consulted 20/02/10].
10. Alexander Dow, *History of Hindostan*, vol. III, quoted in Guha, *A Rule of Property for Bengal*, pp.31–2.
11. Brooks Adams, *The Law of Civilisation and Decay* [1895], quoted in R. Palme Dutt, *India Today*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1940, p.119.
12. Om Prakash, *European Commercial Enterprise in Pre-Colonial India*, New Delhi: Cambridge University Press, 2000, p.349.
13. Utsa Patnaik, 'New Estimates of 18th Century British Trade and Their Relation to Transfers from Tropical Colonies', in K.N. Panikkar, Terence J. Byres and Utsa Patnaik, *The Making of History*, London: Anthem South Asian Studies, 2002. See Table B.5, p.397.

14. Ibid., Table 5, p.389.
15. Jawaharlal Nehru, *The Discovery of India*, London: Meridian Books, 1946, p.247.
16. Angus Maddison, *The World Economy – A Millennial Perspective*, Paris: OECD, 2001, p.112.
17. Quoted in Cornelius Walford, ‘Famines in History’, *Journal of the Statistical Society*, vol. 41, 1878, p.519.
18. Edmund Burke, Speech on the Impeachment of Warren Hastings, February 1788.
19. Marjorie Kelly, *The Divine Right of Capital*, San Francisco: Berrett-Koelher, 2001, p.4.
20. John Seeley, *The Expansion of England* (Lectures, 1883), London: Macmillan & Co, 1914, p.243.
21. Quoted in P.J Thomas, *Mercantilism and the East India Trade*, London: King & Son, 1926, p.17.
22. See Joel Bakan, *The Corporation*, London: Constable & Robinson, 2005, p.57.
23. Russell Sparkes, ‘Through a Glass Darkly – Some Thoughts on the Ethics of Investment’, The Beckley Lecture, 1998.
24. See David Chivers, *The Companies Act 2006 – Directors Duties Guidance*, London: Corporate Responsibility Coalition, 2007.
25. See, Tomorrow’s Company, *Why Stewardship Matters*, London, 2011 and also Financial Reporting Council, *UK Stewardship Code*, London, 2010.
26. See Nick Robins, ‘Downsizing the Corporation’, in *Return to Scale*, London: New Economics Foundation, 2003.
27. Quoted in Ian Hargreaves, ‘The threat to democracy’, *Financial Times*, 21 May 2002.
28. Oko-Institut e.V., ‘Power Generation Market Concentration in Europe 1996–2000. An empirical analysis’, Freiburg, May 2002, <www.oeko.de>.
29. Bill Vorley, *Food Inc.– Corporate concentration from farm to consumer,* London: UK Food Group, 2003.
30. Jean Ziegler, ‘The Right to Food’, Report submitted by the Special Rapporteur, Commission on Human Rights, UN Economic and Social Council, 9 February 2004.
31. Mark Townsend, ‘Tesco in row over foreign workers’, *Observer*, 10 April 2005.
32. Quoted in John Christensen and Richard Murphy, ‘The Social Irresponsibility of Corporate Tax Avoidance’, *Development Journal*, vol. 47, no. 3, 2004.
33. John Kenneth Galbraith, *A History of Economics*, London: Hamish Hamilton, 1987, p.163.
34. John Kenneth Galbraith and Nicole Salinger, *Almost Everyone’s Guide to Economics*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1981, p.53.
35. ‘An empire at bay’ in *The Economist*, 14 July 2010.
36. ATCA specified that ‘district courts shall have original jurisdiction of any civil action made by an alien, for a tort only, committed in violation of the law of nations or a treaty of the United States’.
37. See <www.earthrights.org>.
38. Kenneth Pomeranz, *The Great Divergence*, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2000, pp.171 & 193.
39. Andrew Simms & David Boyle, *Eminent Corporations*, London: Constable & Robinson, 2010, p.344.

EPILOGUE

1. Robert Harvey, *Clive: Life and Death of a British Emperor*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1998, p.368.
2. *Annual Register*, 10 May 1773.
3. Jeremy Bentham, *An Introduction to the Principles of Morals and Legislation*, in *Utilitarianism*, London: Fount Paperbacks, 1979, p.46.
4. Jawaharlal Nehru, *The Discovery of India*, London: Meridian Books, 1946, p.452.
5. Edward Thompson, *The Other Side of the Medal*, London: The Hogarth Press, 1925, p.131.
6. John Seeley, *The Expansion of England* (Lectures, 1883), London: Macmillan & Co, 1914, p.207.
7. Nicholas B. Dirks, *The Scandal of Empire*, Cambridge: Harvard, 2006, p.5.
8. See, for example, Niall Ferguson, *Empire: How Britain Made the Modern World*, London: Allen Lane, 2003.
9. See Madhusree Mukerjee, *Churchill's Secret* War, Chennai: Tranquebar Press, 2010.
10. See <www.museumofthecorporation.org/homePage.htm>.
11. See Nasima Begum Ali et al, *Plassey's Legacy*, London: Brick Lane Circle, 2010.
12. Dipankar De Sarkar, An Indian now owns the East India Company, 15 February 2010 on <www.tradeindia.com>.
13. Ben Okri, quoted in Bhiku Parekh, *The Future of Multi-Ethnic Britain*, London: The Runnymede Trust, 2000, p.103.
14. Edmund Burke, *Correspondence*, quoted in Uday Singh Mehta, *Liberalisation and Empire*, p.169.

Select Bibliography

Alborn, Timothy, *Conceiving Companies*, London: Routledge, 1998.

Ali, Nasima Begum et al, *Plassey's Legacy*, London: Brick Lane Circle, 2010.

Ali, Shahid, *The Half-Inch Himalayas*, Middletown: Wesleyan University Press, 1987.

Allen, Robert J. Allen, ed., *Addison and Steele*, Orlando: Rinehart, 1974.

Amnesty International, *Clouds of Injustice – Bhopal disaster 20 years on*, London: Amnesty International Publications, 2004.

Bakan, Joel, *The Corporation*, London: Constable & Robinson, 2005.

Baron, Archie, *An Indian Affair*, London: Channel 4 Books, 2001.

Bayly, C.A., *Omnibus: Rulers, Townsmen and Bazaars*, Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2010.

Bentham, Jeremy, *An Introduction to the Principles of Morals and Legislation*, in *Utilitarianism*, London: Fount Paperbacks, 1979.

Bernstein, Jeremy, *Dawning of the Raj: The Life and Trials of Warren Hastings*, London: Aurum Press, 2000.

Bickers, Robert, *The Scramble for China: Foreign Devils in the Qing Empire 1832–1914*, London: Allen Lane, 2011.

Blake, Robert, *Jardine Matheson – Traders of the Far East*, London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1999.

Bolts, William, *Considerations on Indian Affairs*, London [1772], in *The East India Company: 1600–1858*, ed. Patrick Tuck, London: Routledge, 1998.

Bowen, Huw, *Revenue and Reform*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1991.

—— *The Business of Empire*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2005.

Bowen, Huw, Margarette Lincoln and Nigel Rigby (eds), *The Worlds of the East India Company*, Woodbridge: Boydell, 2002 .

Bowen, Huw, John McAleer & Robert J. Blyth, *Monsoon Traders*, London: Scala, 2011.

Braudel, Fernand, *Civilization and Capitalism*, vol. 2: *The Wheels of Commerce*, London: Collins, 1982.

—— *Civilization and Capitalism*, vol. 3: *The Perspective of the World*, London: Collins, 1984.

Campbell, Olwen, *Thomas Love Peacock*, London: Arthur Barker, 1953.

Capper, John, *The Three Presidencies of India*, New Delhi: Asian Educational Services, 1997 [1853].

Chancellor, Edward, *Devil Take the Hindmost*, London: Macmillan, 1999.

Chatterji, Bankim Chandra, *Anandamath*, New Delhi: Orient Paperbacks, 2000 [1882].

Chang, Hsin-pao, *Commissioner Lin and the Opium War*, New York: Norton, 1964.

Chaudhuri, Kirti N., *The Trading World of Asia and the East India Company 1660–1760*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1978.

—— *The Economic Development of India Under the East India Company 1814–1858*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1971.

Chaudhury, Sushil, *From Prosperity to Decline: 18th Century Bengal*, New Delhi: Manohar, 1999.

—— *The Prelude to Empire: Plassey Revolution of 1757*, New Delhi: Manohar, 2000.

Clive, Robert, *A Letter to the Proprietors of the East Indian Stock*, London: J. Nourse, 1764.

Collis, Maurice *British Merchant Adventurers*, London: William Collins, 1942.

Collis, Maurice, *Foreign Mud: An account of the Opium War*, London: Faber & Faber, 1997 [1946].

Colley, Linda, *Captives*, London: Random House, 2003.

Crouzet, François, *The Victorian Economy*, London: Methuen, 1982.

Dalrymple, William, *White Mughals*, London: HarperCollins, 2003.

Das, Gurcharan, *India Unbound*, New Delhi: Penguin India, 2002.

Datta, Rajat, *Society, Economy and the Market: Commercialisation in Rural Bengal c.1760–1800*, New Delhi: Manohar, 2000.

Datta, Rajat, Commercialisation, Tribute and the Transition from late Mughal to Early Colonial in India, The *Medieval History Journal*, 6, 2 (2003).

Davis, Mike, *Late Victorian Holocausts*, London: Verso, 2002.

De Jongh, J. Matthijs, 'Shareholder Activists *Avant la Lettre*: The "Complaining Participants" in the Dutch East India Company 1622–25', in Jonathan G.S. Koppell (ed.), *Origins of Shareholder Advocacy*, New York: Palgrave Macmillan, 2011.

Defoe, Daniel, *A Tour through the Whole Island of Great Britain [1724–1726*], London: Folio Society, 2006.

Dutt, Romesh Chunder, *The Economic History of India under Early British Rule (1757–1837*), London: Kegan Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co, 1908.

Dutta, Krishna, *Calcutta*, Northampton: Interlink Books, 2003.

Economic and Political Weekly, *1857*, Hyderabad: Orient Longman, 2008.

Evans, John, *The Gentleman Usher: the Life & Times of George Dempster, 1732–1818*, Barnsley: Pen & Sword, 2005.

Farrington, Antony, *Trading Places*, London: The British Library, 2002.

Ferguson, Niall, *Empire: how Britain made the modern world*, London: Allen Lane, 2003.

Financial Reporting Council, *UK Corporate Governance Code*, London: FRC, 2010.

Foote, Samuel, *The Nabob*, London: T.Sherlock, 1773.

Forrest, Denys, *Tea for the British*, London: Chatto & Windus, 1975.

Foster, William, *Catalogue of Paintings, Statues etc. in the India Office*, London, 1921.

—— *The East India House*, London, 1924.

Fry, Michael, *The Dundas Despotism*, Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press, 1992.

Furber, Holden, *John Company at Work: a Study of European Expansion in the Late Eighteenth Century*, New York: Octagon, 1970.

—— 'Rival Empires of Trade 1600–1800', in *Maritime India*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2004 [1976].

Galbraith, John Kenneth, *A History of Economics*, London: Hamish Hamilton, 1987.

Galbraith, John Kenneth and Nicole Salinger, *Almost Everyone's Guide to Economics*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1981.

Gardner, Brian, *East India Company*, London: Rupert Hart-Davis, 1971.

Gelber, Harry, *The Dragon and the Foreign Devils: China and the World, 1100BC to the Present*, London: Bloomsbury, 2008.

Greenberg, Michael, *British Trade and the Opening of China 1800–1842,* Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1969.

Griffiths, Percival, *A Licence to Trade*, London: Ernest Benn, 1974.
Guha, Ranajit, *A Rule of Property for Bengal*, New Delhi: Orient Longman, 1981.
Habib, Irfan, *Resistance and Modernisation under Haidar Ali & Tipu Sultan*, New Delhi: Tulika, 1999.
Hall, Richard, *Empires of the Monsoon*, London: HarperCollins, 1996.
Hanes, W. Travis and Frank Sanello, *The Opium Wars*, London: Robson Books, 2003.
Harris, Ron, 'Law, Finance and the First Corporations', in James J. Heckman, Robert L. Nelson & Lee Cabatingan, *Global Perspectives on the Rule of Law*, London: Routledge, 2009.
Harvey, Robert, *Clive: Life and Death of a British Emperor*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1998.
Heilbroner, Robert, *The Worldly Philosophers*, New York: Touchstone, 1999.
Hobhouse, Henry, *Seeds of Change: Six Plants that Transformed Mankind*, London: Papermac, 1999.
Huberman, Leo, *We, the People*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1940.
Hunting, Penelope, *Cutlers Gardens*, London: Standard Life, 1984.
Inglis, Brian, *The Opium War*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1976.
Jacobs, Els M., *In Pursuit of Pepper and Tea, The Story of the Dutch East India Company*, Amsterdam: Netherlands Maritime Museum, 1991.
James, Lawrence, *The Iron Duke*, London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1992.
—— *Raj – The Making and Unmaking of British India*, London: Little, Brown & Company, 1999.
Jardine Matheson, *175 Years of Looking to the Future*, Hong Kong: Jardine Matheson, 2007.
Jeeninga, Willke, *The East Indies House and St Jorishof*, Utrecht: Wanders Uitgevers, 1995.
Kaviraj, Narahari, *A Peasant Uprising in Bengal – 1783*, New Delhi: People's Publishing House, 1972.
Keay, John, *The Honourable Company*, London: HarperCollins, 1993.
Kelly, Marjorie, *The Divine Right of Capital*, San Francisco: Berrett-Koelher, 2001.
Kindleberger, Charles, *Manias, Panics and Crashes – A History of Financial Crises*, New York: John Wiley & Sons, 2000.
Korten, David, *When Corporations Rule the World*, London: Earthscan, 1996.
Kuiters, Willem, *The British in Bengal 1756–1773*, Paris: Les Indes Savantes, 2002.
Landes, David, *The Wealth and Poverty of Nations*, London: Little, Brown & Company, 1998.
Lawson, Philip, *The East India Company*, London: Longman, 1993.
Litvin, Daniel, *Empires of Profit: Commerce, Conquest and Corporate Responsibility*, London: Texere, 2003.
Logan, William, *Malabar Manual*, New Delhi: Asian Educational Services, 2000 [1887].
Lovell, Julia, *The Opium War: Drugs, Dreams and the Making of China*, London: Picador, 2011.
Macaulay, Thomas Babington, 'Essay on Lord Clive', January 1840.
—— *Hastings*, New York: Chautauqua Press, 1886 [1841].
—— *History of England from the Accession of James II*, London, 1848–60.
—— *A History of England in the 18th Century* [1849], London: Folio Society, 1980.
Maddison, Angus, *The World Economy – A Millennial Perspective*, Paris: OECD, 2001.

Mahomet, Dean, *The Travels of Dean Mahomet* [1794], ed. Michael H. Fraser, Berkeley: University of California Press, 1997.

Marshall, P.J., *The Impeachment of Warren Hastings*, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1965.

—— *Problems of Empire: Britain and India 1757–1813*, London: George Allen & Unwin, 1968.

—— *East Indian Fortunes: the British in Bengal in the Eighteenth Century*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1976.

—— (ed.), *Writings and Speeches of Edmund Burke*, vol. V, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1981.

–––– *Bengal: the British Bridgehead: Eastern India 1740–1828*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1987.

Mason, Philip, *The Men Who Ruled India*, London: Jonathan Cape, 1985.

Mehta, Uday Singh, *Liberalism and Empire*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1999.

Mickelthwait, John and Adrian Wooldridge, *The Company: A Short History of a Revolutionary Idea*, London: Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 2003.

Mill, James, *History of British India* [1858 edition, with notes and continuation by Horace Hayman-Wilson], 10 vols, London: Routledge/Thoemes Press, 1997.

Milton, Giles, *Nathaniel's Nutmeg*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1999.

Mitra, Debendra, *The Cotton Weavers of Bengal 1757–1833*, Calcutta: Firma KLM, 1978.

Moir, M., D. Peers and Lynn Zastoupil, *John Stuart Mill's Encounter with India*, Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1999.

Morley, John, *Burke*, London: Macmillan, 1892.

Morris, Jane Anne, 'Corporations for the Seventh Generation', in *Defying Corporations, Defining Democracy*, ed. Dean Ruiz, New York: The Apex Press, 2001.

Moxham, Roy, *The Great Hedge of India*, London: Constable, 2001.

—— *The Brief History of Tea: The extraordinary Story of the World's Favourite Drink*, London: Robinson, 2009.

Mui, Hoh-cheung and Lorna H. Mui, *The Management of Monopoly: a Study of the English East India Company's Conduct of its Tea Trade, 1784–1833*, Vancouver: University of British Columbia Press, 1984.

Mukerjee, Madhusree, *Churchill's Secret* War, Chennai: Tranquebar Press, 2010.

Mukherjee, Ramkrishna, *The Rise and Fall of the East India Company*, New York: Monthly Review Press, 1974.

Muthiah, S., *Madras Rediscovered*, Chennai: East West Books, 2004.

Nehru, Jawaharlal, *The Discovery of India*, London: Meridian Books, 1946.

Palme Dutt, R., *India Today*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1940.

Panikkar, K.N., *Against Lord and State: Religion and Peasant Uprisings in Malabar, 1836–1921*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1992.

Panikkar, K.N., Terence J. Byres and Utsa Patnaik (eds), *The Making of History*, London: Anthem South Asian Studies, 2002.

Parkes, Joseph and Herman Merivale, *Memoirs of Sir Philip Francis*, London: Longman, Green & Co., 1867.

Parthasarathi, Prasannan, *The Transition to a Colonial Economy: Weavers, Merchants and Kings in South India, 1720–1800*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2001.

Partnoy, Frank, *Infectious Greed, How Deceit and Risk Corrupted the Financial Markets*, London: Profile Books, 2004.
Pati, Biswamoy (ed.), *The 1857 Rebellion*, Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2010.
Philips, C.H., *The East India Company 1784–1834*, Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1940.
Plumb, J.H., *England in the 18th Century*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1990.
Polanyi, Karl, *Origins of Our Times – The Great Transformation*, London: Victor Gollancz, 1945.
Pomeranz, Kenneth, *The Great Divergence*, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2000.
Prakash, Om, *European Commercial Enterprise in Pre-Colonial India*, New Delhi: Cambridge University Press, 2000.
Reeves, Richard, *John Stuart Mill: Victorian Firebrand*, London: Atlantic Books, 2007.
Rose, Sarah, *For all the Tea in China*, London: Arrow Books, 2010.
Ross, Charles (ed.), *Correspondence of Charles, First Marquis Cornwallis*, Volume 2, London: John Murray, 1859.
Ross, Ian Simpson, *The Life of Adam Smith*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1995.
Rowntree, Joshua, *The Imperial Drug Trade*, London: Methuen & Co, 1906.
Roy, Arundhati, *The Algebra of Infinite Justice*, London: Flamingo, 2002.
Roy, Tirthankar, *The Economic History of India, 1857–1947*, New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 2000.
Said, Edward, *Culture and Imperialism*, London: Chatto & Windus, 1993.
—— *Orientalism*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 2003.
Sampson, Anthony, *Company Man: The Rise and Fall of Corporate Life*, London: HarperCollins, London, 1996.
Schama, Simon, *A History of Britain*, vol. 2: *The British Wars 1603–1776*, London: BBC Books, 2001.
Seeley, J.R, *The Expansion of England*, London: Macmillan & Co., 1914.
Sen, Amartya, *Poverty and Famines: An Essay on Entitlement and Deprivation*, Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1997.
Sen, Sudipta, *Empire of Free Trade: the East India Company and Making of the Colonial Marketplace*, Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1998.
Scott, Walter, *The Surgeon's Daughter,* Edinburgh: Adam and Charles Black, 1863.
Sheridan, Richard Brinsley, *The Rivals*, London: Samuel French.
Simms, Andrew & Boyle, David, *Eminent Corporations*, London: Constable & Robinson, 2010.
Sinha, Chandra Prakash N., *From Decline to Destruction: Agriculture in Bihar during Early British Rule*, New Delhi: Manohar, 1997.
Singer, Aubrey, *The Lion & the Dragon: the story of the first British Embassy to the Court of the Emperor Qianlong in Peking 1792–94*, London: Barrie & Jenkins, 1992.
Smith, Adam, *Inquiry into the Wealth of Nations*, New York: The Modern Library, 1994 [1776].
Spear, Percival, *A History of India 2*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1968.
Sutherland, Lucy, *The East India Company in Eighteenth-Century Politics*, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1952.
Sutton, Jean, *Lords of the East: the East India Company & its Ships*, London: Conway, 2000.

—— *The East India Company's Maritime Service (1746–1834),* Woodbridge: Boydell Press, 2010.
Taifoor, Syed Muhammed, *Glimpses of Old Dhaka*, Dacca: S.M. Perwej, 1956.
Thomas, P.J. *Mercantilism and the East India Trade*, London: King & Son, 1926.
Thompson, Edward, *The Other Side of the Medal*, London: The Hogarth Press, 1925.
Thompson, E.P., *Customs in Common*, Harmondsworth: Penguin, 1993.
Tyler, H., Indian Revenue from Indian Opium, London: James Ridgway, 1857.
Verelst, Harry, *A View on the Rise, Progress and Present State of the English Government in Bengal*, London [1772], in *The East India Company: 1600–1858*, ed. Patrick Tuck, London: Routledge, 1998.
Visram, Rozina, *Asians in Britain: 400 Years of History*, London: Pluto Press, 2002.
Waley, Arthur, *The Opium War through Chinese Eyes*, London, George Allen and Unwin Ltd, 1973.
Waller, Maureen, *1700: Scenes from London Life*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 2000.
Weller, Jac, *Wellington in India*, London: Greenhill Books, 1993.
Weitzman, Sophia, *Warren Hastings & Philip Francis*, Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1929.
Wheen, Francis , *Marx*, London: Fourth Estate, 2000.
Wild, Antony, *The East India Company: Trade and Conquest from 1600*, London: HarperCollins, 1999.
Wills, John E., *1688 – A Global History*, London: Granta, 2002.
Wilson, Jon E., *The Domination of Strangers: Modern Government in Eastern India, 1780–1835*, London: Palgrave Macmillan, 2010.
Zandvliet, Kees, *The Dutch Encounter with Asia, 1600–1650*, Amsterdam: Rijksmuseum, 2002.

Index

Compiled by Sue Carlton

Page numbers in **bold** refer to illustrations

Adams, Brooks 206
Addison, Joseph 58
Agency Houses, collapse of 162–3
Agra 46, 73, 180
Ahmadnagar Fort 12, 222
Ahmedabad 46, 57
Alborn, Timothy 33
Aldrich, William 44–5
Ali, Karim 95
Ali, Shahid 81–2
Alien Tort Claims Act (ATCA) (1789) 214–15
Alinagar, Treaty of (1757) 73
Alipur 122
Alivardi Khan 67, 69–70, 71, 87
Allahabad 125
Ambon (Amboina) 46
America
- and Company's tea trade 4–5, 113–15
  - *see also* Boston Tea Party
- independence 117, 119, 200
- *see also* United States

American War of Independence (1775–83) 5, 21, 109, 125, 143, 153, 172
Amherst, William, 1st Earl 156
Amir Chand (Umichand) 68, 73–4, 75, 78, 127, 219
The Amsterdam 41
Anjarakandi plantation 179
antitrust laws 212, 213
Archaeological Survey of India 11, 82
Arcot 70, 217, 219
- Nawab's debts 118, 132, 137–8, 171–2

Armenian merchants 116
- *see also* Cojamaul; Estephan; Philip; Rafael

Assam Company 166
atonement 222
Aungier, Gerald 36
Aurangzeb (Mughal Emperor) 51, 52, 56, 64, 69
Aurora 109
Austrian War of Succession 171
Awadh 125, 127–8, 141, 142, 194
Ayr Bank (Douglas, Heron & Co.) 99, 102

Bagehot, Walter 100
Bahadur Shah Zafar (Mughal Emperor) 194, 195
Baiganbari 77
banians 61
Bank of England 8, 100, 199
Bantam 29, 45, 46
Baring, Francis 155
Barre, Israel 92
Basra 6
Batavia (Jakarta) 42
Bayley, W.B. 161
BBC (British Broadcasting Corporation) 31
Becher, Richard 71, 94
Beckford, William 106
Beijing 155
Bell, Robert 46–7
Belvedere House 122–3, 127, 143, 223
Benfield, Paul 118, 137, 171, 174
Bengal 51, 60, 61–83, 203, 206
- commercial plunder of 3, 13, 16, 77–8, 79–80, 97–8, 132, 203
- drought and famine 4, 93–8, 105, 120, 128, 200, 207
- and local Asian merchants 67–8
- takeover (1757) 2–3, 33, 63–4
  - *see also* Plassey, Battle of
- textiles 11, 57–8, 64–6, 68
- wealth 11, 64–6, 203
- weavers 80–2, 183–4

Bengal Bubble 90–3, 108, 128, 172, 202
Bengal Warehouse (Bishopsgate) 84–6
Benn, John 127

Bentham, Jeremy 221
Bentinck, William 184, 190
Benyon de Beauvoir, Richard 198
Bernstein, Jeremy 127
Betsy 127, 153, 154
Bhagavad Gita 17
Bhopal disaster 39
Bihar 75, 125, 144, 145, 153, 169, 203, 206
Bijapur 51
Birbhum 95
black hole incident 72, 75, 76, 110
Blake, Robert 168
Boger, Deeble 198
Bohun, Thomas 55
Bolts, William 61, 81, 97, 99, 115–16, 185
Bombay (Mumbai) 6, 29, 47, 48, 71, 87, 146
  and opium trade 159, 166
  siege (1689) 52
boom-and-bust cycles 35, 100
Boston Evening Post 114–15
Boston Tea Party 5, 115, 147
Bourke, John 123
Bowen, Huw 89, 204
Boyle, David 216
Braudel, Fernand 63
Brick Lane Circle 224
Bright, John 191
Britain
  civil wars (1640–47) 48
  conflict with France 55, 70, 156, 172, 177, 179, 181
  recession (1830) 162–3
  textile industry 59, 181–2, 183–4
Britain in Pictures 15
British Library 14–15, 16, 196, 198, 206, 222
British Raj 6, 12, 196
Brown, Murdoch 179
Brunswick Basin 21
Bubble Act (1721) 32, 59, 119
  repeal of (1825) 200
Buckingham, James Silk 162, 185–6, 187
Budhmal, Rajah 96
Burgoyne, John 109, 110, 138–9
Burke, Edmund 92–3, 130, 131–5, 173, 176, 191, 199, 204
  accountability of corporations 130, 207–8, 214
  continual drain of wealth 5, 12, 201, 205–6
  impeachment of Hastings 124, 138–42, 153–4
  pursuit of justice 121, 124, 137, 225–6
Burke, Richard 92
Burke, William 92, 132
Burma 215
Buxar, battle of (1764) 77

Calcutta Journal 185
Calcutta (Kolkata) 6, 11–12, 29, 52, 57, 67
  capture and retaking of 62, 71–3, 82, 164
  and famine 94–5
  and germination of tea seeds 166–7
  and opium trade 145, 153, 158
  statue of Clive 219
calico 55, 57–8, 59, 72
  imitation 181
Calicut (Kozikhode) 43, 44
Canton (Guangzhou) 3, 6, 145, 148–52
  and opium trade 145, 152, 153–4, 156, 157–8, 162–6
Canton System 149, 151, 160, 163
Capper, John 175
Carey, Maria 193
caste system 187, 189, 192, 193
Catherine of Braganza 47, 146
Chandanagore 73, 77
Charles II, King of England 47, 48, 50–1
Charnock, Job 11, 12, 52
charter *see* Royal Charter
Charter Act (1793) 177–8
Charter Act (1813) 182
Charter Act (1833) 186, 197
Chattopadhyaya, Bankim Chandra 128
Chaudhuri, K.N. 23
Chesney, George 207
Child, Sir Josiah (Philopatris) 49–52, 53–4, 55, 57, 204
China 6, 22, 145–70
  and opium trade 6, 7, 16, 17, 145, 152–70, 203, 204
    and Communist revolution (1949) 169
  and tea trade 6, 146–8, 151–2, 158, 166–7
China Repository 154

Christianity, Company's missionary activity 182, 193, 194
Clarke, Richard 18
clash of civilisations 15
Clavering, General John 126, 127
Clive, Robert 33, 69, 70–1, 82–3, 90, 98, 204, 207
  acquisition of *diwani* rights 78–9, 83, 89, 105, 107, 118, 219
  conflict with shareholders 87–8
  corruption 4, 75–6, 109, 110–11, 217
  forged treaty with Amir Chand 74, 75, 127, 219
  insider trading 89
  and lifetime award (jagir) 78, 87–8
  and Nabakrishna 62
  and private trade 89
  properties 70, 82, 219, 224
  rehabilitating memory of 217–21, 223
  relocation of Fort William 11
  statues 9, 10, 217–21, **218**, 223
  takeover of Bengal 2–3, 63, 72–5, 203
Co-Hong 149, 150–2, 165
Cobden, Richard 191
Coen, Jan Pieterszoon 42
Cojamaul, Gregore 116, 214, 215
Coleridge, Samuel Taylor 9
Collis, Maurice 15
Columbus, Christopher 43
Commutation Act (1784) 147–8
Compagnie des Indes 2, 68, 70, 78
Compagnie van Verre (Company of Distant Lands) 41
Companies Act (1862) 200
Companies Act (2006) 211
Company of Royal Adventurers 23
competition 41, 42–3, 56, 59–60, 68, 104, 162, 213–14
Congress Party, 'Quit India' campaign (1942) 12
Conrad, Joseph 195
Consoo Fund 150, 155
Cooke, Sir Thomas 53–4
Coote, Eyre 222
Cornwallis, Charles, 1st Marquis 10, 172, 173–8
Coromandel 46, 47, 48, 57, 66, 171
corporations 119–21, 216
  and accountability 5, 18, 130, 140, 207–9, 214, 216, 2155
  chartered companies 23–4, 30–1, 47, 52, 118, 200, 212
  corporate behaviour/design 33–40, 210
  corporate responsibility 210–11
  dangers of 103–4, 202
  duty to shareholders 210
  and ethics 209–11, 216
  human right abuses 214–16
  and limited liability 24, 34–5, 209, 210–11
  mergers and acquisitions 212
  and military force 36, 42, 44
  monopoly 104–5, 207–8, 212–13
  see also multinational companies
Corpus Christi College, Oxford 198
cotton 48, 64, 181–2, 183–4, 190
Courteen Association 47, 147
Courteen, William 47
Cowper, William 129
Crawfurd, John 161, 162
Cromwell, Oliver 48, 49
Crosby Hall 8
Cuddalore 71, 171
Curzon, George, 1st Marquis of Kedleston 217, 219, 223
Cutlers Gardens 101, 224

Dabhol power project 13
dadni merchants 68–9, 73
Dalrymple, William 15
Daoguang (Qing Emperor) 145
Das, Gurcharan 13
dastaks (duty-free passes) 67, 71, 72, 73, 76, 77
Datta, Rajat 95, 205
Daud, Justice 13
Debates in the Asiatic Assembly 106
Defoe, Daniel 8, 50, 57–8
Delhi (Shahjahanabad) 18, 60, 180, 195
Dempster, George 144, 185
Dendaretegui, Mary 138
deregulation 37, 212, 213
Dhaka
  earthquake (1812) 183
  muslins 3, 65–6, 224
Dickens, Charles 195
Dinajpur 128
Disraeli, Benjamin 165, 194
Dividend Act (1767) 91, 108
diwani rights 3, 17, 78–9, 83, 84, 89, 107–8, 152, 204
  and East India Company share prices 3, 89, 90–1
  as liability 124

Dobree, Joseph 198
Dow, Alexander 3, 205
Dowgate Adventurers 53, 55
Drake, Roger 71, 72, 164
duel, between Hastings and Francis 122–3, 127, 143, 223
Dum-Dum 82, 224
Dundas, Henry 130–1, 136, 139, 143, 173, 177–8
Dupleix, Joseph François 68, 70
Dutch United East India Company (VOC) 26, 41–2, 48, 78, 203
  paintings 1–2, 42
Dutt, Romesh Chunder 12, 14

Eagle House (Wimbledon) 47
Earl of Abergavenny 9
East India Company
  and accountability 27, 130, 134, 201, 207–9
  carrying literature to China 161
  as chartered company 5, 23–4, 30–1, 45, 107–8, 185, 186, 190–3
    charter renewal 48, 51, 53, 59, 60, 107, 130, 209
    see also Charter Acts
  compared to modern corporation 27–8, 30–2, 37, 38, 200, 201
  corruption 4, 50–1, 60, 75, 86–7, 111, 124, 128, 131, 137–8, 173–4, 175–6, 187, 196
    bribery 38, 52, 53–4, 57, 62–3, 86, 135
  Court of Directors 28–9
  and credit 171–2
  in crisis 4–5, 22, 33, 99–100, 132–4
  criticism of 4, 5, 12, 13, 99, 103–7, 108–10, 115, 118–19
  cultural legacy 15–16, 17
  and drain of India 5, 12, 198, 201, 204, 205–6
    see also Bengal, commercial plunder of
  and duty exemptions in India 67
  employees
    covenant 37
    and private trade 29–30, 86, 89–90, 124, 133, 162, 203
    and promotion 29
  and exclusion of Indians 174, 188
  and finance 34–5, 99
  governance structure 26–30
  and government loans 110, 111, 129, 135, 182
  headquarters in London 4, 178, 196
    see also East India House
  historical significance of 5–10, 14–18, 199–200
  and imperialism 39–40, 204–6, 207
  and imposition of British values 188–9
  and joint stock model 24–7, 32, 34, 202
  lack of monuments to 10, 14
  legal case against 116–17
  London warehouses 84–6, 186–7, 224
  military force 35–6, 46, 47, 51–2, 130, 132, 159, 171–3, 178–81, 200, 203
    see also Indian Mutiny
  as model for multinational companies 22–3, 201–2
  and monopoly 5, 29, 31–2, 36–7, 59–60, 80, 118–19, 124–5, 162, 177, 187
    loss of 22, 85, 160, 181–5
  and nationalisation 6, 186–7, 195–6, 198, 199
  New Company 52, 54, 55–6, 59, 201
  perceptions of 16–18, 221
  and promotion of Christianity 182, 193, 194
  and reckoning 222–6
  and regulation 37–9, 111–12, 132, 207
  representation in Parliament 184
  romantic reinterpretations of 14–16
  scale of operations 5–6, 36–7
  share prices 4, 5, 24, 25–6, 48–9, 54, 59, 68, 85–6, 98–9
    and acquisition of *diwani* 3, 89, 90–1
    see also Bengal Bubble
  shareholders 27, 56, 60, 202, 210
    and commercial surrender 186–7, 198
    in conflict 87–8
    disenfranchisement 111, 134
    and limited liability 24, 34–5, 118, 209, 210–11
  speculation 4, 25, 35, 38, 59, 90–2
  and state intervention 25, 107–15, 201
  tax collection 17, 124, 172, 174–5
    see also diwani rights

and technology 35–6, 214
trademark purchased by Indian entrepreneur 225
East India Company Syndrome 13–14
East India Docks (Blackwall) 19–22, **20**
closure of 22, 186
East India House 7–10, **178**, 199
attacked by weavers 55
bailiff called in 135–6
clerks 9–10
demolition of 10, 200
paintings and statues 1, 2, 8–9, 10
sale of 196
East India Stock Redemption Act 197–8
'East Indiamen' ships 19, 21, 30, 36, 133
The East Offering Her Riches to Britannia (Spiridione Roma) 1, **2**, 4, 5, 10
The Economist 214
Eddington, Rod 15
Egypt, Napoleon's invasion of (1798) 172
Eight Regulations (Canton trading terms) 149
Elizabeth I, Queen of England 8, 44–5
Ellenborough, Edward Law, 1st earl of 166
Elliott, Charles 164
Encounters exhibition (V&A museum) 224
Enron 13, 35
Estephan, Wuscan 116
Evelyn, John 57

Farrukhsiyar (Mughal Emperor) 57, 67
Ferguson, Niall 223
Filartiga, Dolly 214–15
finance, as factor in corporate behaviour 34–5
Firebrace, Sir Basil 54, 56
firmans (imperial decrees) 19, 38, 46, 57, 59, 66–7, 203
Firth, Gideon 138
Foote, Samuel 106–7
Fordyce, Alexander 99
Fort St David 71, 171
Fort St George (Madras) 11, 47, 171, 222
Fort William 11, 71, 72
Fortune, Robert 167
Fox, Charles James 131, 133–5, 143, 144
France 68, 143
Compagnie des Indes 2, 68, 70, 78
conflict with Britain 55, 70, 156, 172, 177, 179, 181
Francis, Philip 80, 125, 126–7, 132, 137–8, 139, 174, 177–8
duel with Hastings 122–3, 127, 143, 223
and 'Junius' letters 123–4
portrait of 143
free trade 43, 47, 53, 119, 160, 184, 185, 187, 200
and monopoly of supply 162, 168
and opium 16, 146, 158, 163, 164, 165
French Revolution 142
Friedman, Thomas 36
Fry, Williams Storr 165

Galbraith, John Kenneth 119, 213
Gama, Vasco da 43–4
Gent, Christopher 76
Gentleman's Magazine 17, 39, 94–5, 98, 105–6, 112
George III, King of England 9, 122, 129, 134–5, 142, 155, 217
Ghalib, Asadullah Khan 18
Girdler's Carpet 46–7
Gladstone, William Ewart 145, 165, 190
globalisation 14, 36, 39, 58, 202, 212–13
Glorious Revolution (1688) 25, 52, 56, 70, 131
gomastas (paid agents) 69, 77, 78, 80, 81
Gombroon 6
Government House (Calcutta) 11–12
Grant, Charles 162, 185, 186
Great Rebellion *see* Indian Mutiny
Greeley, Horace 191
Greenberg, Michael 156
Guha, Ranajit 175
Gujarat 46, 48, 52, 57, 180
Gulbenkian, Calouste 74

Hai Kwan Pu (Hoppo) 150, 151
Haliburton, David 175–6
Harvey, Robert 75
Hastings, Warren 5, 17–18, 92, 97, 109, 112, 124–9, 131, 132–3
advice on missionary activity 194
and Bengal famine 95–6

Hastings, Warren *contd*
duel with Francis 122–3, 127, 143, 223
impeachment 17–18, 62–3, 124, 125, 138–42, 153–4, 207, 214
and Nabakrishna 62–3
and opium trade 153–4
paintings and statues of 4, 10, 143, 221
Havel, Vaclav 212
Hawkins, William 46
Hickey, Thomas 61
Hindu civilisation 187–8
Hindu religion 15, 195
Hindustani language 13, 168
Holland, John and Edward J. 175–6
Hong Kong 158, 165, 166
Hornby, William 130
Hossain, Hameeda 81
Howqua 151
Hudson Bay Company 23, 200
Hugli 47, 67, 68, 73
Hume, David 102
Hume, Joseph 181
Hunt, Leigh 9
Hyder Ali 85, 118, 128–9, 131, 172
Hyderabad 51, 57, 60, 71, 72

Impey, Elijah 126
India
British imperial scorn for 187–90
and colonial rule 6–7
distrust of multinational companies 13–14
First War of Independence *see* Indian Mutiny
impact of East India Company 6, 11–14, 17
independence movement 12–13
land ownership 174–5
map **65**
need for modernisation 191–2
and opium trade 153, 156–7, 159, 162, 163
India Act (1784) 136, 137, 173, 178, 181, 204
India Act (1858) 6
India Bill (1783) 134–5, 137, 144, 207–8
see also India Act (1784)
India Office 10, 196, 217, 223
Indian Mutiny (Great Rebellion) (1857) 6, 167, 193, 194–5, 206
warning signs 193–4
Indian sailors (*lascars*) 21
Indonesia 6, 29, 36, 41, 45, 203
Industrial Revolution, financing of 205–6
Inglis, Brian 159
international law 39, 214–16
investment, socially responsible 210–11
invisible hand 102, 120
Iraq, invasion of (2003) 208
Isaacsz, Pieter 1–2
Islam, Sirajul 79

Jackson, Randle 181
Jagat Seth 68
Jagat Seth family 73
Jahangir (Mughal Emperor) 36, 46
James II, King of England 52
James, Robert 40
James, Sir William 134
Jardine Matheson (the Firm) 146, 160–1, 162, 164, 165, 168, 169–70, 199
Jardine, William 154, 160, 163, 164–5, 168
Jefferson, Thomas 119
Jenkinson, Charles 97
Johnson, Dr Samuel 110
Joint Stock Act (1844) 200
joint stock model 32, 42, 86, 118, 119, 209, 216
East India Company and 24–7, 32, 34, 202
Jones, William 17, 187
'Junius' 105, 122, 123
see also Francis, Philip

Kadatanad 180
Kanpur (Cawnpore) 195
Karadzic, Radovan 215
karma 222
Kaufman, Irving 215
Kay, John 59
Kelly, Marjorie 208
Kora 125
Kurichiar tribals 180

Lady Hughes 154
Lamb, Charles 9, 21
Lancashire, cotton industry 181–2
lascars 21
Lawrence, Stringer 9
Legal Quays 21
Lemon, John and Elizabeth 21

Levant Company 23, 44, 200
Lewis, George Cornewall 196
Lin Zexu 145, 163–4, 166, 169
List, Friedrich 184
London
  map **220**
  Stock Exchange 24
Lonsdale, James 143
Lord Amherst 161
Lovell, Julia 169
Lucknow 194

Macartney, Lord George, 1st Earl 154–6
Macaulay, Thomas Babington 22, 52, 90, 186
  on Child 49
  on Clive 75, 76, 77, 217, 219
  contempt for India 189, 226
  and impeachment of Hastings 125–6, 139
Mackenzie, John 125
Macrabie, Alexander 126
Madras (Chennai) 6, 29, 47, 48, 70, 82, 171–2
Magniac & Co 160
Mahomet, Dean 96
Malabar 179–80
Malthus, Thomas 121
Marathas 127, 128, 159, 180
Marcos, Ferdinand 215
Marjoribanks, Charles 161, 162
Martin, Montgomery 205
Marx, Karl 141, 191–2
  analysis of Company 40, 191, 192, 204
  on Company's fall 196
  and modernisation of India 191–2
  on Opium Wars 168
Mary II, Queen of England 52
Masefield, John 85, 101
Mast House 21
Masulipatam 46
Matheson & Co. 199
Matheson, Donald 168
Matheson, James 160, 166, 168
Mehta, Sanjiv 225
Meredith, William 110
Mill, George Grote 9–10
Mill, James 9, 79, 141, 186, 187–9, 191, 193
Mill, James Bentham 9
Mill, John Stuart 9, 141, 175, 189, 192, 193, 195–6
Milman, Dean Henry Hart 176
Mir Jafar 3, 12, 73, 75, 76, 77, 78, 87, 122
Mir Kasim 76, 77, 79, 88
monopoly corporations 104–5, 207–8, 212–13
  see also East India Company, and monopoly
Monson, George 126
Morley, John 141, 218–19
Morris, Jane Anne 115
Mowbray, John 61
Mughal system
  breakdown of 69–70, 200, 204
  trade policy 66
multinational companies
  and East India Company model 22–3, 36, 201–2
  and power 13, 16
  see also corporations
Munro, Thomas 188
Murdoch, Rupert 214
Murshid Quli 69
Murshidabad 62, 69, 74, 95, 116, 124
Muscovy Company 23
Museum of the Corporation 223–4
Muslim religion 15, 195
muslins 3, 65–6, 181, 224
Mysore 82, 153, 172, 173, 179

Nabakrishna Deb, Rajah 61–3
The Nabob (Foote) 106–7
Nadir Shah 60
Najim-ud-Daula 77, 88
Nandakumar, Rajah 126–7, 129, 142
Nanjing, Treaty of (1842) 165, 166, 168
Napier, Charles 163, 166
Napoleonic War (1815) 25
National Maritime Museum 224
National Portrait Gallery 142–3
Nehru, Jawaharlal 12–13, 17, 168, 206, 222
Nemesis 146, 165
Netherlands
  protestant revolt 44
  public–private trade model 23
New York Daily Tribune 191
Nile, Battle of 172
Nonsuch 127, 153, 154
Noorthouck, James 9
Norfolk, Lawrence 7–8

North, Frederick, Lord 109–10, 132
coalition with Fox 131, 133, 134–5
and Regulating Act 111–12, 124
and renewal of Company charter 129–30
and Tea Act 112, 114–15

Okri, Ben 225
Oostindisch Huis 41
Opium and Alkaloid Works 169
Opium Society 78
opium trade 6, 7, 38, 127, 145–6, 152–70, 200, 203
Bihar 144, 145, 153, 169, 203
campaigns against 145, 168
Chinese ban on 17, 145, 152–3
Company monopoly 124–5, 188, 203
Dutch monopoly 78
Malwa 152, 157, 159, 160
opium for medicinal purposes 152–3, 169
Patna 6, 67, 78, 124
and 'Trading Places' exhibition 16
Opium War Museum (Humen) 145, 164, 169
Opium Wars 146, 163–8, 169
Orissa 206
Orme, Robert 69
Osborne, Thomas 54
Overend & Gurney 200

Pahareas 96
Paine, Tom 140
Palmer & Co. 162
Palmerston, Henry John Temple, 3rd Viscount 164–5
Papillon, Thomas 49, 51, 53
Paris, Treaty of (1763) 171
Parthasarathi, Prasannan 80
Pati, Biswamoy 194
Patna Group 78, 153
Patnaik, Utsa 206
Paupiah, Avadhanum 175–6
Pazhassi Rajah 179–80
Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle 70
Peacock, Thomas Love 9
Penang 6
pepper 6, 43, 44–5, 47, 48, 179, 199
Pepys, Samuel 147
Philip, Melcomb 116
Pigot, George 117–18
piracy 45, 214
Pitt, Thomas, and diamond 58–9, 171
Pitt, William (the Elder) 27, 59, 78, 105, 108, 217
Pitt, William (the Younger) 59, 130, 135–7, 143, 173
Plassey, Battle of (1757) 2–3, 11, 12, 13, 71–5, 77, 82, 88
150th anniversary 217
as colonial conquest 3, 63
effect on share prices 85
and intensification of corrupt practices 86–7
and textile trade 80, 84
Platform 223
Pliny 64
Polanyi, Karl 120
Pollexfen, John 54, 209
Pollilur, battle of (1780) 118, 128, 172
Pomeranz, Kenneth 36
Pondicherry 171
Poonamallee 71
Pope, Alexander 58
Poplar 19, 21, 224
Portugal 11, 23, 47, 146, 150
defeat at Surat (1612) 35–6, 46
and opium trade 152, 159
peace with (1635) 47
and spice trade 41, 43–4
primitive accumulation 192
privatisation 210, 212, 213
protectionism 55, 59, 181–4
Pultenay, William 102
Punch magazine 166, 195, **197**
Purnea 95

Qianlong, Emperor of China 148–9, 155
Qing empire 145–6, 148–50, 152, 155–6, 167, 200, 204

racism 193
Rafael, Johannes Padre 116, 214, 215
Raffles, Stamford 15
Raj Bhavan 11
Rajshahi 95
Rangpur 129
'Reclusus' 115
Reform Bill (1832) 184
Regulating Act (1773) 111–12, 124, 126, 129, 132
regulation, as factor in corporate behaviour 34, 37–9, 209–10
Reynolds, Joshua 143
rice trade 94, 120

Roe, Sir Thomas 46
Rohilkhand 125
Rohilla war 142
Rom, Koondul 138
Rowlandson, Thomas **135**
Roy, Arundhati 13
Roy, Rajat Kanta 195
Roy, Ram Mohun 188–9
Royal African Company 23, 49, 200
Royal Charter 23, 30–1
  see also Charter Acts; corporations, chartered companies; East India Company, as chartered company
Royal Exchange 24, 199
Royal Navy 49, 70, 72, 163, 165, 179, 200
Rumbold, Thomas 130–1
Russell, John 190
'Rusticus' 115
Rysbrack, Michael 2

Said, Edward 192–3
St Helena 5–6
St Matthias Church 19
Salim, Gulam Husain 57
salt trade 17, 67, 89, 125, 179
saltpetre 53, 67, 73, 78
San Thome 70
Sandys, Sir Edwyn 47
sannyasi (holy men), uprisings 76, 96, 128
Sassoon, David 169
sati (widow-burning) 189
Savarkar, Veer 194
Sayers, James 134
scale, as factor in corporate behaviour 34, 36–7
Scott, Walter 176
Scottish East India Company 47, 53
Scrafton, Luke 77
Sea Battle Museum (Humen) 169
Seeley, John 15, 176, 222
Seringapatam 172, 179–80
Seven Years' War (1756–63) 108, 117, 171, 217
Shah Alam II (Mughal Emperor) 3, 77, 79
Shah Munju 96, 128
Shah Musa 128
Shajio Paotai fortress (Humen) 169
Shelburne, William Petty, 2nd earl of 92, 131
Shelley, Percy Bysshe 9
Sheridan, Richard Brinsley 139–40, 141–2
Shujauddin 69
silk 48, 55, 147
silk winders, cutting off thumbs 81–2
silver 6, 7, 43, 66, 94, 145–6, 151, 152, 159
Simms, Andrew 216
Sind, conquest of (1843) 166
Singapore 6, 15
Singh, Debi 128
Singh, Narayan 71–2
Sinha, Chandra Prakash 124
Sinha, N.K. 205
Siraj-ud-Daula 62, 67, 70, 71–2, 74–5
Skinners Hall (Dowgate) 52
slave trade 23, 49, 58, 200
Smith, Adam 102–5, 118–21
  and colonialism 117, 143
  and corporations 33–4, 64, 103, 118–20, 202, 208, 210, 212
    joint stock model 119, 216
  criticism of Company 4, 103–5, 118–19
  and end of Company 182
  and famine 120–1
  and free trade 56, 104, 119, 120, 184
  and monopoly power 60, 104–5, 118, 207, 213
Smith, Nathaniel 136
Smythe, Sir Thomas 8
Snodgrass, Gabriel 111
Society for the Suppression of the Opium Trade 168
Society of Trade 89, 90, 112, 124
South Sea Bubble (1721) 8, 25, 32, 50, 59, 63, 92
South Sea Company 8, 32, 59, 200
Sovabazar 61, 62
spice trade 41, 43–6, 179
Spiridione Roma 1, **2**, 3, 4, 5, 10, 39, 90, 222
Standard Chartered Bank 14–15
Steengaard, Niels 44
Stepney Green 4
Strahan, William 118
Styche Hall (Shropshire) 70
Sulivan, Laurence 83, 87–8, 92, 108, 207
Sulivan, Stephen 127, 153, 207
supermarkets 213
Surat 29, 48, 52
  Portuguese defeat (1612) 35–6, 46

Taifoor, Syed Muhammed 183
Taiping rebellion (1850) 167
Tanjore 118, 132
Tea Act (1773) 112–15, 136
tea trade 3–5, 6, 22, 146–8, 156
  acquiring plants and seeds 166–7
  American boycott 99, 101, 114
    see also Boston Tea Party
  China 6, 146–8, 151–2, 158, 166–7
  tax cut 136, 147–8
technology, as factor in corporate
    behaviour 34, 35–6
textile trade 3, 11, 46–9, 57–9, 68,
    79–82, 147, 181–4, 190, 192
  and protectionism in Britain 181–2,
    183–4
  and war with France 54
  see also calico; cotton; muslins; silk
Thatcher, Margaret 8
Thompson, Edward 222
Thurlow, Edward 221
Tientsin 155
Tipu Sahib 172
  clockwork tiger 10, 179
Tomorrow's Company 211
Townsend, Charles 113–14
'Trading Places' exhibition (2002)
    14–15, 16
Trichinopoly 70
Truth About Trading Places website 16

UN Commission on Human Rights 213
Union Carbide 39
United Carbide 39
United Company of Merchants Trading
    to the East Indies 56, 201
  see also East India Company
United Joint Stock 47
United States 39, 119
  see also America
Unocal 215
unrequited trade 78–80

Valentine 92
Varanasi (Benares) 125, 139
  Rajah of 142
Vellore mutiny (1806) 193
Verelst, Harry 116–17, 214, 215
Victoria and Albert Museum 10, 14, 224
Victoria, Queen 168
Virginia Company 23
Virmani, Arvind 14
Vondel, Joost van der 42

Wajid, Khwaja 67
Walford, Cornelius 93
Walpole, Horace 98
Walpole, Robert 59
Walsh, John 89
War of the Austrian Succession
    (1740–8) 70
War of the Spanish Succession
    (1701–14) 70
Waterloo, Battle of (1815) 70, 181
Watson, Admiral Charles 72, 74, 222
weavers 147
  Bengal 66, 68, 80–2, 183–4
  English 59, 64, 184
  protest marches (1696) 55
Weddell, Captain John 147
Wedderburn, General Alexander 221
Wellesley, Arthur 179–80
Wellesley, Richard (Governor-General)
    11–12, 159, 172, 179, 180–1
West India Dock project 22
Westminster Abbey, monuments 221–2
Wilberforce, William 182
Wilkes, John 105
William III, King of England 52
Wilson, Henry 183
Window Tax 136
Wood, Charles 190–1
Wordsworth, William 9
Writers' Building (Calcutta) 12

Yadana gas pipeline 215
Yale, Elihu 171
Young India campaign 191
Young, William 127

zamindari 174–5
Zheng He 150
Zhoushan 155
Ziegler, Jean 213